THE LONDON SERIES OF ENGLISH TEXTS

GULLIVER'S TRAVELS

PARTS ONE & TWO

JONATHAN SWIFT

[UNI]VERSITY OF LONDON PRESS Ltd.

THE LONDON SERIES OF ENGLISH TEXTS
UNDER THE GENERAL EDITORSHIP OF
ALLARDYCE NICOLL

GULLIVER'S TRAVELS

PARTS I AND II

The

London Series of English Texts

A New Series of Shakespearian and other English Texts under the General Editorship of

Allardyce Nicoll

Professor of English Language and Literature in the University of London (East London College)

These texts mark a novel departure from the ordinary editions prepared for School and for University use. Prepared by an able body of editors with full knowledge of the requirements of Matriculation and Intermediate students, they introduce in a simple and attractive manner some of the results of modern scholarship and research.

Each Shakespeare volume will contain a general introduction, a particular introduction to the play, a carefully prepared text, an outline of variant readings, and full notes designed both to elucidate difficulties and to draw the student's attention to the dramatic value of the play.

The volumes for early publication are:

SHAKESPEARE

Coriolanus. With Introduction and Notes by F. W. Payne, M.A.

Henry IV (Part I). With Introduction and Notes by W. S. Hipkins, B.A.

Twelfth Night. With Introduction and Notes by W. S. Hipkins, B.A.

Hamlet. With Introduction and Notes by F. W. Payne, M.A.

Macbeth. With Introduction and Notes by D. M. Walmsley, M.A.

Much Ado About Nothing. With Introduction and Notes by S. F. G. Norris, B.A.

MATTHEW ARNOLD

Sohrab and Rustum, The Scholar-Gipsy and Thyrsis. With Notes by F. W. Payne, M.A.

SWIFT

Gulliver's Travels (Parts I and II). With Notes, etc., by F. W. Payne, M.A.

THE TRAVELS OF LEMUEL GULLIVER

PARTS I AND II

BY

JONATHAN SWIFT

EDITED WITH INTRODUCTION AND NOTES
BY
F. W. PAYNE, M.A.
HEAD OF THE MODERN LANGUAGE DEPARTMENT
IN THE WESTCLIFF HIGH SCHOOL

Price Rs. 2.

LONDON
UNIVERSITY OF LONDON PRESS, LTD.
WARWICK SQUARE, E.C.4

CONTENTS

PRINTED IN INDIA FROM PLATES AT THE DIOCESAN PRESS, MADRAS (P.I.C. NO. Q.H. MS. 5) FOR MESSRS. LONGMANS, GREEN & CO. LTD., MADRAS (P.I.C. NO. MS. 3)—10-6-1946. C1338.

PREFACE

In preparing this text it seemed better to modernise the details, because it is almost certain that the Dean did not read the proofs of any edition. The spelling and capital letters of the original, therefore, represent not so much the author as the printer, who is known to have taken great liberties with the text.

Any reader who is interested to the point of wishing to obtain more information about the Dean will find *Swift*, by Sir Leslie Stephen, and *Jonathan Swift*, by Churton Collins, both easy to obtain and cheap to buy. A very different view of Swift is given in Thackeray's *English Humourists*. Swift's works can be had in the Bohn Library, and the first to be read should be *The Journal to Stella*.

I take this opportunity of thanking Mr. Humphrey Milford, of the Oxford University Press, for the loan of and permission to use the facsimile blocks of the three title pages and two maps from the 1727 edition given in this volume.

F. W. P.

HINTS TO THE STUDENT

1. Consider well the following :

T. Campbell : 'Whoever reads Swift a second time laughs more heartily at him than on the first perusal.'

Macaulay : 'He moves laughter, but never joins in it. He appears in his works such as he appears in society. All the company are convulsed with merriment, while the Dean, the author of all the mirth, preserves an invincible gravity and sourness of aspect.'

2. First read the text through without reference to Introduction or Notes ; next read the Introduction ; then work the text with all aids.

3. To appreciate the Dean's satire the student must consult the history of the time—Macaulay's *History* and Stanhope's *Queen Anne* would be a good selection. Do not attempt to read them through, but when a point is raised, use the index and see what they have to say.

4. When writing the Essays indicated in the list of subjects given, first search the Introduction and Notes for hints, quote from the text in support of your arguments, and learn the quoted passages by heart.

A SKETCH OF THE LIFE OF JONATHAN SWIFT, D.D., DEAN OF ST. PATRICK'S

Period of Dependency

Jonathan Swift came of a Yorkshire family, but his grandfather migrated southwards, and was vicar of Goodrich near Ross, in Herefordshire, at the outbreak of the Civil War. He was a zealous Cavalier, and contributed to the King's cause 300 broad pieces of gold, a large sum for one in his position, and an invention which on one occasion cost the Roundheads two hundred men. As a result he was deprived of his living during the Commonwealth, and died in 1658, just too soon to be rewarded for his devotion. He left, however, ten sons and four daughters, and his services were recognised by the appointment of some of these to positions in Ireland in the King's service. The eldest, Godwin Swift, became Attorney-General in the palatinate of Tipperary, and prospered, being, as his famous nephew says, 'an ill pleader, but perhaps a little too dexterous in the subtle parts of the law.' His brother Jonathan was made steward of the King's Inns, Dublin, in 1666, married forthwith a lady named Abigail Erick of Leicester and died in 1667, leaving an infant daughter. Seven months later Jonathan Swift, afterwards Dean of St. Patrick's, was born at 7 Hoey's Court, Dublin. During his childhood he seems to have seen very little of his mother. In the first place his nurse became very fond of him and, having to return from Ireland to Whitehaven, kidnapped him. He was allowed to stay with her three years, during which time she taught him, with the result that he could read any chapter of the Bible before he was five years old. Soon after he returned to Ireland his mother went to live in Leicester, but Jonathan was left behind in charge of his uncle Godwin, who sent him

to the famous Kilkenny School at the age of six years, and afterwards, in 1682, entered him at Trinity College, Dublin.

Swift seems not to have been happy at Dublin, partly because he resented the obligation under which he was to his uncle, and partly because he thought the latter did not treat him with sufficient generosity. Certainly the meagreness of Godwin Swift's allowance seems to have caused his nephew considerable hardship, but it must be remembered that he had ten children of his own to consider, and that his wealth was much reduced by unfortunate speculation. Of this last Jonathan was probably unaware; for he says that owing to discouragement due to 'the ill treatment of his nearest relations he too much neglected some parts of his academick studies: for which he had no great relish by nature, and turned himself to reading history and poetry.' As a result he was 'ploughed' when he wished to take his degree, and only obtained it in 1686, *speciali gratia*—by special favour. In considering Swift's attitude towards both uncle and work, it should be noted that he entered the university at the age of fourteen, and took his B.A. when eighteen years old. He stayed at Trinity College two years longer, but his discontent seems to have expressed itself in the traditional manner, by a revolt against constituted authority. He is mentioned rather frequently in the records of the University as insubordinate. When in 1688 the Revolution took place, Ireland threatened to become unsafe for Englishmen, and Swift with many others left the country, proceeding to Leicester, where he stayed for some months with his mother. He brought with him two lessons thoroughly well learned as a result of his rather joyless youth—the value of money, and the bitterness of a dependent state. For the next ten years he struggled to achieve independence as a preliminary to employing the powers of which he was doubtless conscious to make him a career.

Meanwhile it was impossible to stay long with his mother, whose income seems to have been only £20 a year. She was related in some way to the wife of Sir William Temple, and advised her son to apply to him, on whom he had a further claim in that Sir William's father had been a close friend of Godwin Swift. At this time the only way for an unknown

man to obtain preferment was by means of a patron. He attached himself to some great man and frequently became part of his household. In return for work performed as page, secretary or what not he obtained board, the opportunity of meeting great men, and a chance that if he pleased his patron the latter might bestow on him some office of which he had the disposal.

Sir William Temple, who seems startlingly modern when compared with his contemporaries, had achieved great fame as ambassador and as negotiator of the general peace at Nimeguen in 1678. He had lately acquired Moor Park, near Farnham in Surrey, where he proposed to spend his time in preparing his writings for publication and in making a beautiful garden. Swift was engaged by him to act as amanuensis or secretary.

During the next few years Swift seems to have read with great diligence. Dr. Johnson says 'for eight hours a day.' After one year he had an attack of a disease from which he had suffered before, and which tormented him at intervals throughout life, becoming almost chronic towards the end. The chief symptom was giddiness, and after a bout he would be deaf for some time. On this occasion, as the doctors thought his native air might do him good, he went to Ireland, but grew rather worse, so that he soon returned to Moor Park. In 1692 he took his M.A. degree at Oxford, and from a letter written at this time to his uncle it is clear that he had now some prospects of advancement. He had met King William, who while Prince of Orange had been a friend of Temple, and still visited him and sent to him for advice whenever he encountered something unusually difficult to comprehend in his struggles with the English Constitution. On one occasion (1693) Swift was sent by Temple to the King to explain such a matter. Although he did not succeed in convincing William, the incident shows that Temple must have had a good opinion of Swift, who must also have impressed the King favourably, for the latter instructed him in the proper way to cut asparagus and offered to make him a captain of horse. Probably Swift, who had no leanings to a military life, obtained a promise of ecclesiastical preferment instead of the captaincy, for in the letter mentioned above he says 'that he is not to take orders

until the King gives him a prebend.' Meanwhile he continued at Moor Park, but soon, coming to the opinion that Sir William did not move to obtain him the prebend because he wished to retain his services as secretary, eased his mind, 'still to unhappy restless thoughts inclined,' as he says in a poem written about this time, by a quarrel with his patron (1694). Temple offered him a secular post which Swift refused, preferring to go to Ireland and take orders there (January 1695). He obtained the prebend of Kilroot, found himself resident in a country district, grew heartily tired of the isolation, and in 1696 accepted an offer by Sir William Temple and returned to Moor Park, glad to be on the outskirts of that society which had preferments to bestow. In 1698 he resigned his prebend, probably in consequence of a definite promise which he obtained from William of an English preferment. From 1696 until Temple's death in 1699 we hear no more of quarrels; Swift seems to have passed his time in reading, in helping Sir William to prepare his works for publication, and in attempting to achieve health by exercise. He used to run every day, and walk a great deal. Like many other great men, he was fond of tramping, and when he went to visit his mother would commonly walk to Leicester, putting up at inns by the way, and at cheap ones for preference; for, as grew more apparent later, he had learned to value a shilling at full twelve pence. When Sir William died, he left Swift £100, and whatever benefits might accrue from the publication of his works. With these, and a promise from the King, Swift was once more thrown upon the world. His work as a writer during the period just reviewed consisted of some Pindaric Odes, which as poetry are lamentable, and two prose works of great importance, *The Tale of a Tub* and *The Battle of the Books.* The latter of these was written in 1697 to support his patron, who had, in one of his Essays, first introduced into England the struggle between Ancients and Moderns. Probably Swift never bothered to decide the merits of the controversy—at any rate, he goes cheerfully in on the wrong side and gives us a delightful description of a Homeric battle, with single episodes between writers such as Vergil and Dryden. *The Tale of a Tub*, probably written in

1696, is perhaps from a critical point of view his best piece of work, so good indeed that Johnson, who for some reason disliked Swift, doubted if the latter could have written it. As in *The Battle of the Books*, the object of attack is pedantry, but there it was pedantry in literature, here it is pedantry as applied to religion. It is typical of Swift's carelessness of literary reputation that at Temple's death neither of these books was published, nor did they appear for some years after.

One more fact of the greatest importance to Swift must be mentioned. When he went to Moor Park he found living there a young girl named Esther Johnson, a child whom Temple was bringing up because her father was dead, and her mother a friend of his sister, Lady Giffard. Swift was the tutor of Esther for some years, and a lifelong affection arose between them. She was undoubtedly the person for whom Swift cared most. She was eight years old when he first went to live with Sir William, and eighteen when the latter died and left her £1,000.

Period of Bare Independence and Ambition

Swift tried at once to remind the King of his promise, but either the noble who acted as his intermediary failed him or the King refused to act. Tired with waiting, Swift accepted an appointment as chaplain and secretary to the Earl of Berkeley, who had just been made one of the Lords Justices of Ireland. When they reached Dublin, Berkeley gave the secretaryship to someone else, and refused Swift the deanery of Derry which fell vacant, unless he would pay £1,000 as a bribe. A little later, however, he was given the living of Laracor, a village about twenty miles from Dublin, two smaller livings and a prebend in the cathedral of St. Patrick, which made up his income to about £230 a year. Swift hated to live anywhere except near London, but of all his residences in Ireland he seems to have preferred Laracor. He improved the place, attempted an imitation of the gardens of Moor Park there, and used it as a retreat when his political schemes went awry. Hardly was he settled when, acting on his advice, Mrs.[1] Johnson,

[1] Cf. p. 14, l. 4 note.

accompanied by Mrs. Dingley, came to Ireland. Both of these ladies had but small capital, and as a much higher rate of interest could be obtained in Ireland than in England, the arrangement was much to their advantage.

Swift can hardly be said to have lived in Ireland between the years 1700 and 1710, for his interests were all in London, and he himself was there fully four years of the ten. This was quite natural, though it seems strange that he could afford to travel so much and pay curates to perform his duties in Ireland. Through Sir William Temple, Congreve, his schoolfellow at Kilkenny, and the successive Viceroys of Ireland, he had the entrée to London Society, and there, if anywhere, he had to look for preferment. To London he accordingly went in 1701, and plunged forthwith into the political struggles of the time. By the first years of the eighteenth century the original distinction between Whigs and Tories, the acceptance or rejection of the theory of divine right, was fast disappearing. The majority of the nation had no real desire to see the Stuarts restored,[1] and the two risings of 1715 and 1745 were rather examples of galvanism than of resuscitation. The Tory party now represented the landed aristocracy and the Church of England, and was burdened with a traditional Jacobitism, this last being emphasised particularly by the Whigs. The Whig party was made up of the moneyed classes and Dissenters, and they made their loyalty to the House of Orange and the Constitution the chief plank in their platform, not that it was necessary but because it discredited the Tories by implication. The real differences between the two parties were in connection with religious policy, and above all the war. Under the fiscal system of the day the burden of the war was borne by the landed owners, i.e. the Tories, and they accordingly desired to stop it. The Whigs, dominated by the Marlborough clique, for whom the war was decidedly a paying affair, wished to continue it. In 1701 a new House of Commons met in which the Tories had a majority, and it proceeded to impeach on various grounds Somers, Portland

[1] This is shown by the fact that in 1714 Bolingbroke was able to get a majority in the House of Commons for a declaration in favour of the House of Hanover.

and other Whig ministers. The House of Lords, however, which was Whig in complexion, acquitted Somers and his companions, and when William prorogued Parliament matters were at a deadlock.

Meanwhile Swift had arrived in England. Like every English inhabitant of Ireland he was an Orangeman, and so far a Whig. But before everything he was a Church of England man. That is, in ordinary politics he was a Whig, in Church matters a Tory. It was for this reason that he failed to obtain preferment during this period. He could honestly and did capably support the Whigs on most occasions, but when they threatened to touch the privileges of the Church he turned on them. When Swift's character is estimated this fidelity to the Church, exercised so directly in opposition to his own interests, must be held to cover a multitude of other sins.

For the moment, however, he was in full accord with the Whig lords, and wrote a pamphlet called *Dissensions in Athens and Rome*, the gist of which is that the House of Commons, by creating a deadlock, was interfering with the effective working of the Constitution, and should be dealt with accordingly. The pamphlet made a great stir, and as a consequence Swift was taken up by the Whig Junto, who promised to reward him when they should again be in power. It is to be remembered to his credit that in 1704, when the Tories were attempting to pass the Occasional Nonconformity Bill, he refused to oppose it in the Whig interest. In this year also *The Tale of a Tub* was published. In 1707 Swift came to England as a representative of the Irish Clergy, to attempt to obtain for them benefits under Queen Anne's Bounty, which was already operating in England. For this purpose he hoped to use his influence with Somers and Sunderland. The latter was already Secretary of State, and Somers soon obtained office. Swift now had high hopes of obtaining the First-fruits concession for the Irish Clergy, and a bishopric for himself. Somers tried to obtain for him the see of Waterford, which fell vacant in January 1708, but the Queen, who was prejudiced against Swift by *The Tale of a Tub*, which hardly seems like the work of an ardent Christian, refused to grant it.

Meanwhile the First-fruits negotiation went very slowly, the chief obstacle being Wharton, the Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, who was decidedly irreligious. At last a promise was obtained that the grant should be made, but no action was taken. While this was going on Swift published two pamphlets which showed his uncompromising adherence to the Church of England, and these probably destroyed what hope he had of preferment from the Whig lords. He therefore returned to Laracor in 1709, nursing against the Whigs a grudge which seems rather unreasonable, seeing that he had opposed them at least as frequently as he had helped them. But he argued in a thoroughly characteristic manner. They were scoundrels, first because they were Whigs, and he no longer regarded Whigs with favour; second, because they differed in opinion from himself, to do which a man must be vile, base, scoundrelly, a dog and so on. So much did he take to heart his disappointment, that he shut himself up at Laracor, and would meet no one of the Castle set, always excepting Addison, who was now in Ireland as secretary to the Lord Lieutenant. He says, 'I stayed above half the time in one scurvy acre of ground, and I always left it with regret.'

This retirement, however, lasted only eighteen months, and then a new political situation arose in England. The prosecution of Dr. Sacheverell in the winter of 1709–10 caused the fall of the Whig ministry. The Queen broke with the Marlboroughs and the Tories came into power. Harley became Chancellor of the Exchequer, and St. John Secretary of State. As one of the main tenets of the Tory doctrine was support of the Church, this was an obvious opportunity to raise again the First-fruits question on behalf of the Irish Clergy. As Swift had nearly been successful before, he was deputed to handle the negotiation, and accordingly set out for England in September 1710, as it seems rather reluctantly, for the situation promised nothing for his personal ambition. All the great men he knew were now out of office; he was acquainted with neither of the Tory leaders. When he reached London, the Whigs made much of him, but he received their advances coldly, and would have no more to do with them. By October 7 he was discussing the First-fruits business with

Harley, the Tory leader, who received the proposal with enthusiasm, and on November 4 Swift was able to announce to the Archbishop of Dublin that the matter was settled.

This expedition was due to the fact that Harley had determined at all costs to obtain the services of Swift. He realised that, in those days, when it was impossible to control a party by means of speeches made in the House, because there was no press to report the speeches, the greatest need of a Government was a capable writer who would by means of pamphlets and periodicals direct thought and maintain discipline among its adherents. Having the wit to perceive that Swift was the most effective pamphleteer of the day, Harley made a bid for his services, treated him in the most flattering way, and not only won him politically but also made him his friend for life.

This last seems rather curious, for Harley, as seen to-day, shows as a rather inefficient statesman whose speciality was backstair intrigue. This quality should not have attracted Swift, who had in the highest degree the faculty of seeing through sham of every kind. The explanation probably lies in Swift's method of classifying people. There were two classes, his few intimate friends, and the rest. The 'rest' he viewed in the most clear-sighted manner, especially as regards their faults, but when once he had, for any reason, adopted a person into his inner circle, he lavished affection freely and would go to any lengths to support and defend him.

Swift's first task was to conduct the party organ, the *Examiner*. This he did in the most efficient manner, contributing a weekly article from November 1709 until June 1711. Of these the aim was to show the Tory policy in its most attractive light. The nation generally was tired of the war, therefore Swift was able to assume the pose of a plain man talking common sense and so damage Marlborough, the great support of the Whig party, by implication, and with a great show of reason. His argument was something like this. Military glory is a very fine thing, and all honour was due to the great leaders who had made our arms so successful. The plain fact, however, was that the war no longer served any useful purpose. Then why was it being continued? He regretted to be obliged to say that

it was to serve the private interest of its chief supporters. All of this, of course, was aimed at Marlborough.

In the summer of 1711 the fact leaked out that Harley had started secret peace negotiations, and a great parliamentary struggle ensued, in which Swift's pamphlet *The Conduct of the Allies* was perhaps the deciding factor in favour of the Tories. It had a record sale, partly because of its brilliancy and partly because it contained a vast number of facts not hitherto made public. After this Swift's writings, though considerable, were of less importance to the ministry, but his personal ascendancy over Harley and St. John continued until the fall of the ministry. This personal ascendancy is a curious but undisputed phenomenon. He held no office, yet his influence was undoubtedly very great. Nearly every detail which concerns him is known through the *Journal to Stella*, a series of letters which he wrote between September 1710 and April 1713 to Mrs. Johnson, better known as Stella. These letters, it is true, do not deal directly with politics, but they give a vast number of significant details. It is only fair to add that wherever the statements made in them can be checked by outside information, they are invariably found true. A sufficient body of evidence exists to show that for the three years following 1711 Swift exercised a great influence, and was one of the most courted men in England. And this result he achieved by sheer self-assertion. Soon after he joined the Tories, Harley offered him a fifty pound note. Swift regarded this as an insult, demanded to be considered an ally, not a hireling, and would not be appeased for nearly a fortnight. It must be admitted that the successful adoption of this line of conduct implies under the circumstances at once charm and a power of domination. Having once achieved his position Swift was not the man 'to bear his honours even.' The record of his behaviour reads like a narration of sheer vulgarity. He required everyone, no matter how great, to give way to him. Yet Johnson cannot be right in suggesting that his attitude was one of servility disguised by insolence, for it seems clear that nearly everyone *did* give way as required. Nor did he use the position achieved by his bluster and merit merely for selfish ends. There is evidence to show that he helped many who applied to him, especially unknown people

desirous of recognition. He even extended his favours to the despised Whigs, for we find the ministers complaining that he never came to them 'without a Whig in his sleeve.'

At the beginning of 1713 Swift is still without preferment, but restless and dissatisfied. He claims that he 'has solicited nothing,' but clearly thinks that something should be done for him. Probably the prejudice of the Queen again prevented him from obtaining a bishopric, but in April he was appointed Dean of St. Patrick's, and in June left for Ireland in order to take possession. After a few months the dissensions between Harley and St. John, due largely to the former's inability to decide whom he would propose as a successor to Queen Anne, reached such a point that Swift was recalled and did his best to reconcile them. He contrived a conference, but though St. John was willing to come to an agreement Harley would not commit himself. Swift found that nothing could be done, and retired from London to await the inevitable fall. At this time he wrote his *Thoughts on the Present Discontent*, which show him to have been in sympathy with St. John, but out of personal loyalty he clung to Harley, and refused to join St. John when he was engineering the former's dismissal. When the Queen died and St. John also fell, Swift returned to Ireland.

Life in Ireland

The Dean took up his residence in Ireland in a fury of resentment, which seems rather difficult to understand. A deanery after all is a deanery, and his was worth several hundreds a year. Yet there are several things which help to explain his attitude. To begin with his health was bad. The attacks of giddiness and of resulting deafness had increased on him of late, and he seems to have been aged beyond his forty-seven years. Next he hated to live anywhere but in England, and Dublin to him was banishment. Again, he had undoubtedly hoped for much greater preferment than a deanery, and but for the Queen's objection to that unlucky *Tale of a Tub* would certainly have obtained it. In addition he was not well received in Dublin, where the society was largely Whig. Last

and probably most important, he cherished a very real affection for his personal friends, and his letters prove that he felt keenly the troubles which Harley and St. John were undergoing at this time. All these confirmed his natural pessimism, and resulted in a mood of savage revolt. His state of mind did not prevent Swift from fulfilling his duties vigorously. Delaney says, 'I never saw poor so carefully and conscientiously attended to in my life as those in his cathedral!' He ruled his deanery with a rod of iron, and successfully resisted various attempts made by higher dignitaries to encroach upon his authority. His attitude seems to have been dictated not merely by personal pride, but by a deep regard for the dignity of his order. On one occasion he told the Bishop of Meath to remember that he was speaking 'to a clergyman, and not to a footman.' This attitude, which cannot but be admired, taken together with his Tory associations, explains why the Dean was to a certain degree isolated from society in Dublin. During the first few years he seems to have found distraction from his troubles and ill-health in the composition of *Gulliver's Travels*, of which more in another place, and in the companionship of Stella. Yet this last, which certainly constituted the greatest happiness of the Dean's stormy life, was vitiated by an unfortunate complication. During his period of power in London he had become acquainted with a Mrs. Vanhomrigh, at whose house he dined frequently, and was very friendly with her daughter, later known as Vanessa. He seems to have directed her reading and to have taken her to a large extent into his confidence, with the result that she conceived a violent passion for him. When Swift realised this, he was genuinely perturbed, for it seems to be established that love, as generally understood, was unknown to him. However, although he gave her much sensible advice, he seems not to have had sufficient strength to break entirely with her, and soon after his final retirement to Ireland, Vanessa, her mother being dead, followed and settled near Dublin. For some years thereafter, Swift had his two worshippers, Stella and Vanessa, at uncomfortably close quarters. With Stella he was exceedingly intimate; saw her practically every day, and had her to help entertain his guests, though never openly as hostess. With Vanessa, whom he visited a

good deal, he carried on a fairly constant correspondence. Her share of it consists of frank love-letters ; in his he insists on the friendship motif ; when she complains that she lives a life 'like a languishing death' he recommends her to obtain a more healthy outlook by means of constant exercise. In short his letters are those of a man in an exceedingly awkward predicament, who can see no way out but by giving cruel hurt. And, throughout, he insists on secrecy. Such a situation was bound to end disastrously, and at last in 1723 it seems that Vanessa wrote to Stella and asked whether she was married to Swift. Stella passed the letter on to Swift, who rode in a rage to Vanessa, placed the letter on a table without speaking a word, and departed. Soon after Vanessa died. No doubt's Swift's treatment was one cause of this, but she had always been weak in health.

The reader must remember that the above version of the climax is not established. Something of the sort happened, and I have adopted here the account which seems best substantiated. The same caution applies to what follows about Swift's marriage. Lack of space prevents discussion of the evidence, but it seems very probable that in 1716 Swift had married Stella. If so, the marriage was merely a form, and was kept as a secret. Swift took the greatest care not to compromise Stella, and never seems to have met her save in the company of a third person. The procedure seems foolish, because she was certainly the focussing point of whatever joy he derived from life, yet his poems and addresses to her, while showing intense affection, suggest friendship as the basis of it rather than love. It is possible that he decided never to marry, and went through the ceremony with her merely as an assurance that he would never marry anyone else. Under such circumstances the pleasure each took in the other's company must have been to a certain extent poisoned.

Meanwhile it is safe to suppose that Swift, neglected by Whig society in Ireland, was forgotten in England, where the Whigs had entered upon their long reign. For ten years he gave no sign of his existence, his only political writing being a pamphlet *Arachne and Pallas*, in which he exhorts the Irish to refuse to trade with England. But in 1724 Swift gave his

old opponents a real taste of his quality. At this time Ireland had practically used up its copper coinage, which was of course a great inconvenience in everyday affairs. A patent was therefore granted by Walpole to supply this deficiency, and this patent came into the hands of one Wood. The scheme aroused much resentment in Ireland, where it was not understood that real benefit to the country would ensue. Swift probably understood this, but the attitude towards Ireland which the scheme revealed roused his ire. The patent was originally granted to the Duchess of Kendal, a mistress of the King, who sold it to Wood. The Duchess already drew £3,000 a year in pensions from Ireland. Wood expected to make a large profit, in which the Duchess would share. Swift considered it infamous that an Irish national need should be treated by the English Government as a mere matter for shady speculation; he therefore took the field with the famous *Drapier's Letters.* He dared not, however, present his real case, so adopted the view already current, that Wood would make tremendous profits and that the coinage would be worthless, because the copper in six of the pennies would not be equal intrinsically in value to a silver sixpence. This view he exaggerated and backed up by false deductions in a series of letters, each line of which, although the argument is often pure nonsense, breathes a real indignation. These letters were so admirably conceived, and so forcibly written, that they raised a storm which caused the project to be abandoned, leaving Swift victor and the idol to the end of his life of all classes in Ireland except the aristocracy.

It is evident that in this affair Swift was not inspired by ambition. A collision with the Whigs at that time would serve no such end. What caused his outbreak was the violent resentment which oppression, corruption and sham in every form always aroused in him. His motives in this, as in other undertakings, were admirable, but his deep-rooted pessimism and scorn gave to his protest a form as bitter as it was effective.

Two years later the Dean's hatred of the shifty side of human nature was again indicated. In 1726 he went to England to visit his friends Pope and Arbuthnot, and took with him for publication the manuscript of *Gulliver's Travels,* written since his retirement to Ireland in 1714. The success

of the book was immediate and striking, for in 1727 a second edition was required. Few books in the language have been more read, or enjoyed from more diverse points of view.[1]

It is probable that the applause accorded to his book brought little joy to Swift, for he had been greatly troubled for some time by the failing health of Stella. It is stated with some probability that about this time he offered to make their marriage public, but she replied that it was too late. A visit of his to England in 1727 was cut short by her extreme illness, and in 1728 she died. Swift had some reason for self-reproach, for undoubtedly her fondness for him had spoilt her life. He was also exceedingly attached to her, and between the two emotions was plunged into extreme despondency, which increased his habitual pessimism. This is well shown in a pamphlet he wrote in 1729, *The Modest Proposal*, the irony of which is dreadful. The man who could write that must have been sick at heart indeed. For a few years longer he continued to write, and some of the best of his poetical performances belong to this period. Two brilliant pieces of prose—*Directions to Servants* and *Polite Conversations*—were written after *The Modest Proposal*.

Although he was generally at variance with the upper classes in Dublin, he had distinguished friends, of whom the chief were Delaney, a tutor in the University, and Dr. Sheridan, ancestor of the great playwright. There is evidence that he derived a good deal of pleasure from his intercourse with them. The habit of economy which he had acquired in his youth grew upon him. At first he divided his income into three parts: one he gave away in charity, on one he lived, and the third he saved to be left for charitable purposes after his death. His charity was remarkable both for its amount and the judicious manner of its distribution, but as time went on he cut his personal expenses down to the minimum, by which he lost many friends, for he reached the stage of parsimony at which he refused to provide them with a bottle of wine, and, according to Dr. Johnson, 'in Ireland no man visits where he cannot drink.' At the same time his petulance and violent temper became more noticeable, so that he gradually became a burden to his friends as his mental disease increased. At last in 1739, as he was

[1] The *Travels* are dealt with in detail on pp. xli–v of this Introduction.

writing the *Legion Club*, a verse production of utter savagery, in which madness itself can be seen grinning, he had a kind of fit, and ever after was incapable of sustained composition. From this time his mind rapidly deteriorated, and the story of his last years is best passed gently over. His giddiness and consequent deafness became nearly chronic ; almost his last letter (1740) shows his dread of these attacks. His mind weakened until he had to be guarded. At one period a tumour on the eye caused him for a long time excruciating agony, so that people had to watch to prevent him from plucking out the whole eye. Fortunately this tumour subsided, and the agony gave place to a comatic condition in which he existed for some two or three years, speaking only at intervals of months. He died at last on October 19, 1745. The spectacle of this brilliant, .vigorous, self-assertive spirit dragging out its last years in vacancy, weakness and dependence is deeply pathetic.

In estimating the character of the Dean it is important to distinguish between personal idiosyncrasies and vital marks of character. Many a man who is heartily disliked by his own circle is both good and great. Swift was such an one. To us now he appears during his retirement in Ireland as a rather unpleasant elderly man, addicted to domineering conversation and frugality. And doubtless most who knew him in Dublin would have accepted this estimate, except those few upon whom he took the trouble to exercise his undoubted charm. But against this petty arrogance of manner there is much to set. The outstanding traits of his character are self-esteem, which his enduring fame has surely in part justified ; uprightness—witness his attention to all his duties, the fact that he left all his preferments more valuable than he found them, and especially his assertion of his Church of England principles at a time when he had high hopes of preferment from the Whigs ; and essential chivalry. There was no pretence about his hatred of hypocrisy and oppression. His fiercest outbursts—so savagely expressed as to make the reader shudder —are always on behalf of the swindled against the swindler, on the side of the oppressed against the oppressor. And these attacks of his, although he only expresses hatred for the wrong-doer, imply a depth of sympathy with the sufferer. The very

paroxysms of rage in which he indulges are a measure of hidden affection. A capacity for feeling other's wrongs may be a very dreadful thing, and it certainly strengthened and vitalised Swift's pessimism; nevertheless, it is a rare gift which the gods keep for those they wish to love.

Of Swift's conduct towards Stella the wise man will say nothing. To pass judgment on such an affair, given attested facts and much documentary evidence, would be an almost impossible task; in Swift's case *all* the evidence is mere hearsay.

There is no doubt that in his later years the Dean effectually concealed his essential uprightness and trueheartedness under a mask of arrogance and spleen, but who will deny that the good qualities outweigh the petty defects?

AN OUTLINE OF THE DEVELOPMENT OF ENGLISH PROSE, WITH SPECIAL REFERENCE TO *GULLIVER'S TRAVELS*

Early English Prose

The first English literary prose was a gift to the nation from that amazingly capable and worthy king, Alfred. He made every effort to encourage his clergy in the cultivation of letters, in the translation of learned works into the vulgar tongue, but almost in vain. He himself did nearly all the writing that was done, his work consisting mainly of translations of books which he thought would be of use to his people. Alfred had little genius as a writer. The interest of his work lies in the glimpses it occasionally affords of the pathetic humility and earnestness of this great king. His prose expresses with sufficient clearness what he has to say, in spite of the inflexibility of the language. Alfred had only one worthy successor, the man who continued the Chronicle. Over half a century elapsed before the next writer, Ælfric, came, and he was a priest. With him English prose becomes a matter of sermons, homilies and the like, and so it continued for four hundred years. It is curious to observe that for more than three hundred years the style remained at the level which Alfred and Ælfric gave it. The language changes, for inflexions are dropped ; the vocabulary becomes greater, for French and Latin words are incorporated ; but the style remains unaltered—naive and rather incapable of precision. This was largely due to the predominance of the Normans, on account of which English became for a time merely the language of the lower classes. In the middle of the fourteenth century, however, came Wiclif, who took this English prose in hand and gave it new powers. His translation of the Bible, which he partly made himself and wholly inspired, have dignity to the language and is a noble work, though his

idiom is too infested with Latinisms, due largely to the fact that he was translating from the Vulgate. But perhaps he performed his most important work for English prose in the tracts which he wrote in such numbers, and which either expound his theories or attack his enemies, particularly the friars. The great fault of the prose hitherto had been lack of precision. Wiclif, using English constantly for the purpose of close argument, corrects this, giving it clearness and vigour, and extending its previous range. Yet literary grace was the last thing to which Wiclif aspired. He was fully satisfied when his words expressed his meaning, and his immediate successors made no improvement. Another century passed before Sir John Malory, writing about 1470, made of this journeyman medium a thing of beauty. His work, the *Morte Darthur*, a compilation from various sources, giving the Arthur legend as understood by the fifteenth century, is written in a prose which, while showing clearly its lineal descent from that of Alfred, exhibits terseness curiously blended with picturesque beauty. Below are quoted for purposes of comparison an extract from Ælfred, from Wiclif and from Malory.

I think the reader will have no difficulty in agreeing that whereas all these have much in common, the first is naive, the second workmanlike, but the third beautiful.

King Ælfred : *Preface to his translation of Gregory's Cura Pastoralis ; Stopford Brooke's Translation.*

King Ælfred biddeth greet Bishop Wærferth with loving and friendly words, and I let it be known to thee that it has come very often into my mind what wise men there formerly were both among the clergy and the laymen, and what happy times there were then throughout England ; and how the Kings who had rule over the people (in those days) obeyed God and his ministers, and they kept place, law and order at home, and also spread their lands abroad : and how it was well with them both in war and in wisdom ; and also how keen were the clergy about both teaching and learning and all the services they owed to God, and how men from abroad sought wisdom and teaching hither in (our) land, and how we must now get them from without if we would have them. So utterly had it (learning) fallen away in England that there were very few on this side of the Humber who could understand their service

books in English, or even put a letter from Latin into English; and I think there were not many beyond the Humber. So few there were of them that I cannot think of even one when I came to the throne.

Wiclif : *De Officio Pastorali*, on the translation of the Bible. For the most part modern forms have simply been substituted for the older ones, but occasionally it has been necessary to translate.

And here the friars with their supporters say that it is heresy to write thus God's law in English, and to make it known to unlearned men. And forty signs which they bring to distinguish a heretic are not worth rehearsing, for they are grounded in nothing but impious nonsense.

It seems first that the wisdom of God's law should be taught in the tongue that is more generally known, because this wisdom is God's word. When Christ says in the Gospel that both heaven and earth shall pass, but His words shall not pass, by His words He means wisdom. And thus God's wisdom is Holy Writ, which can in no way be false. Also the Holy Ghost gave to the apostles on Whit Sunday wisdom to know all kinds of languages, and to teach the people God's wisdom by means of them; and therefore God wished that the people should be taught God's wisdom in different tongues. And what man, if he were on the side of God, would reverse God's ordinance and will ?

Sir Thomas Malory : from *The Book of Sir Launcelot*.

Right so Sir Launcelot departed, and when he came to the Chapel Perilous, he alighted down and tied his horse to a little gate. And as soon as he was within the churchyard, he saw on the front of the chapel many fair rich shields turned upside down, and many of the shields Sir Launcelot had seen knights bare before; with that he saw stand by him thirty great knights, more by a yard than any man that ever he had seen, and all those grinned and gnashed at Sir Launcelot, and, when he saw their countenance, he dread them sore, and so put his shield afore him, and took his sword in his hand ready to do battle, and they were all armed in black harness, ready with their shields, and swords drawn. And when Sir Launcelot would have gone through them, they scattered on every side of him, and gave him the way; and therewith he waxed

all bold, and entered into the chapel, and then he saw no light but a dim lamp burning, and then he was aware of a corpse covered with a cloth of silk; then Sir Launcelot stooped down and cut a piece of that cloth away, and then it fared under him as the earth had quaked a little, whereof he was afraid, and then he saw a fair sword lie by the dead knight, and that he gat in his hand and hied him out of the chapel. As soon as he was in the chapel yard, all the knights spoke to him with a grimly voice, and said: 'Knight Sir Launcelot, lay that sword from thee, or else thou shalt die.' 'Whether I live or die,' said Sir Launcelot, 'with no great words get ye it again, therefore fight for it an ye list.' Therewith he passed through them.

Renaissance Prose

Soon after Sir Thomas Malory and the introduction of printing came the Renaissance, which tended to thrust English prose back into the obscurity whence it was beginning to emerge. Latin became more than ever the common language for educated Europeans, and to use the vulgar tongue was to lay one's scholarship open to suspicion. Only those who, as in the Reformation controversies, had to address the unlearned man on some political or religious matter, condescended to the use of English. This attitude had a bad effect, for, although in their Latin prose these writers strained every nerve to achieve style, in English they had no thought of elegance. The result is that at first their English prose is poor indeed compared with that of Malory, from whom, had they not been too well educated, they could have learned many lessons. In 1545, however, came one who used English for matter which might have been treated in Latin, Roger Ascham, one of the earliest teachers of Greek in England and tutor to Edward VI, Mary and Elizabeth. He wrote in English *The Schoolmaster* and *Toxophilus*, and earns our gratitude by braving the criticism of his day and throwing his considerable weight in the scale on the side of English. A close comparison of the following extract with that from Malory will show that they are very different. Apart from Ascham's stiffness there is a vital difference in the structure of the sentences. Malory is fond of short separate sentences, simply tied together with conjunction.

Ascham's sentence, with its array of clauses, many of them elaborately balanced, is built on Latin lines.

Roger Ascham: *Toxophilus*, 1545.

If any man would blame me, either for taking such a matter in hand, or else for writing it in the English tongue, this answer I may make him, that when the best of the realm think it honest for them to use, I, one of the meanest sort, ought not to suppose it vile for me to write; and though to have written it in another tongue had been both more profitable for my study, and also more honest for my name, yet I can think my labour well bestowed, if with a little hindrance of my profit and name, may come any furtherance to the pleasure or commodity of the gentlemen and yeomen of England, for whose sake I took this matter in hand. . . . And as for the Latin and Greek tongue every thing is so excellently done in them that no man can do better; in the English tongue, contrary, every thing in a manner so meanly both for the matter and handling, that no man can do worse. For therein the least learned, for the most part, have been always most ready to write. And they which had least hope in Latin have been most bold in English; when surely every man that is most ready to talk is not most able to write. He that will write well in any tongue must follow this judgment of Aristotle, to speak as the common people do, to think as wise men do.

As mentioned before, one chief difference between the above and the Malory type of prose was the complicated structure of the sentence. This was to be the mark of the new era, and the next writer whom we can notice brought to the prose sentence yet another refinement. In 1579 John Lyly published a book, a sort of novel, called *Euphues*, of which the title and the contents of one section were actually derived from Ascham's *Schoolmaster*. The merit of Lyly's sentences was that they were fairly short and clear; the most noticeable thing about them is the antithesis of which he is so fond; and his fault is that all the sentences are made in the same way, and so become very monotonous.

The following passage will serve as an example:

'Thou takest it heavily that thou shouldst be accused without colour and exiled without cause; and I think thee happy to be

so well rid of the court and be so void of crime. Thou sayst banishment is bitter to the free-born, and I deem it the better if thou be without blame. There be many meats which are sour in the mouth and sharp in the maw, but if thou mingle them with sweet sauces they yield both a pleasant taste and wholesome nourishment. Divers colours offend the eye, yet having green among them whet the sight. I speak this to this end, that though thy exile seem grievous to thee, yet guiding thyself with the rules of philosophy it shall be more tolerable; he that is cold doth not cover himself with care, but with clothes: he that is washed in the rain dryeth himself by the fire, not by his fancy; and thou which art banished oughtest not with tears to bewail thy hap, but with wisdom to heal thy hurt.

Lyly's fate was hard, for his affectation of antithesis and of the grand style had great influence, but the really valuable example he set of making his sentences clear and short was disregarded, and from this point until the Restoration the prose sentence became continually longer and more involved.

It is impossible here to trace the various stages of this process, but before giving an example of this kind of prose at its highest point of development another factor must be mentioned. The most remarkable pre-Elizabethan prose performance was the translation of the Bible carried out by Tyndale and Coverdale. As a piece of craftsmanship it is almost impossible to overpraise their version. The matter which they translated being both metrical and poetical, they were insensibly constrained to a rhythmic and an elevated diction, thus developing capacities hitherto unsuspected in English prose. The long, involved sentence was suitable for the display of these qualities, and consequently we find on reviewing the prose of Elizabethan times and on into the seventeenth century that it becomes more and more poetical, or at any rate declamatory; also that towards the end of the period it becomes exceedingly shapeless and cumbersome, owing to various causes. For example, often a writer, carried away by the emotion he has evoked in his sentence, relies on the reader's using it as a link between that sentence and the next, which is therefore imperfectly expressed. In short, early in the seventeenth century the prose sentence had become an instrument which few could handle,

capable of great beauty and majesty in the hands of Jeremy Taylor or Milton, but among lesser folk sadly given to vain repetition, obscurity and pomposity.

The following extracts should be compared with that from Malory.

Milton : *Areopagitica.*

For as in a body when the blood is fresh, the spirits pure and vigorous, not only to vital but to rational faculties, and those in the acutest and the pertest operations of wit and subtlety, it argues in what good plight and constitution the body is; so when the cheerfulness of the people is so sprightly up, as that it has not only wherewith to guard well its own freedom and safety, but to spare, and to bestow upon the solidest and sublimest points of controversy and new invention, it betokens us not degenerated, nor drooping to a fatal decay, but casting off the old and wrinkled skin of corruption to outlive these pangs, and wax young again, entering the glorious ways of truth and prosperous virtue, destined to become great and honourable in these latter ages. Methinks I see in my mind a noble and puissant nation rousing herself like a strong man after sleep, and shaking her invincible locks: methinks I see her as an eagle muing her mighty youth, and kindling her undazzled eyes at the full midday beam; purging and unscaling her long-abused sight at the fountain itself of heavenly radiance; while the whole noise of timorous and flocking birds, with those also that love the twilight, flutter about, amazed at what she means, and in their envious gabble would prognosticate a year of sects and schisms.

Jeremy Taylor : *Holy Living and Holy Dying.*

For so have I seen a lark rising from his bed of grass, soaring upwards and singing as he rises and hopes to get to Heaven and climb above the clouds; but the poor bird was beaten back with the loud sighings of an eastern wind and his motion made irregular and inconstant, descending more at every breath of the tempest than it could recover by the vibration and frequent weighing of his wings; till the little creature was forced to sit down and pant and stay till the storm was over; and then it made a prosperous flight and did rise and sing as if he had learned music and motion from an angel as he passed sometimes through the air about his ministries here below. So is the prayer of a good man: when his affairs

have required business, and his business was matter of discipline, and his discipline was to pass upon a sinning person, or had a design of charity, his duty met with infirmities of a man and anger was its instrument, and the instrument became stronger than the prime agent and raised a tempest and overruled the man; and then his prayer was broken and his thoughts troubled.

Sir Walter Raleigh: *Last Fight of the Revenge.*

Sir Richard finding himself in this distress, and unable any longer to make resistance, having endured in this fifteen hours' fight the assault of fifteen several Armadoes, all by turns aboard him, and by estimation eight hundred shot of great artillery, besides many assaults and entries, and that himself and the ship must needs be possessed by the enemy, who were now all cast in a ring about him; the *Revenge* not able to move one way or other but as she was moved with the waves and billow of the sea, commanded the Master Gunner, whom he knew to be a most resolute man, to split and sink the ship, that thereby nothing might remain of glory or victory to the Spaniards, seeing in so many hours' fight, and with so great a navy they were not able to take her, having had fifteen hours' time, fifteen thousand men, and fifty and three sail of men of war to perform it withal. And persuaded the company or as many as he could induce to yield themselves unto God, and to the mercy of none else, but as they had like valiant resolute men repulsed so many enemies, they should not now shorten the honour of their nation, by prolonging their own lives for a few hours or a few days.

The Prose of Reason

The seventeenth century witnessed a complete change in men's habits of thought. The Middle Ages were an uncritical time. The universe and certain statements of early writers about it were taken for granted; in particular, traditional science, abounding as it was in obvious errors, was swallowed whole. Apparently it did not occur to the average man of the Middle Ages to take these statements and test them; instead, he seems to have considered that they must be true because Galen or some other philosopher had said they were. Towards the end of the sixteenth century there comes a change. We find Bacon putting in a plea for experiment in science, which meant that he wished to submit all statements to the test

of reason. This idea of reason as the arbiter of thought rapidly gained ground. In the first half of the seventeenth century it produced in France the philosopher Descartes. Descartes was a soldier who had the most original brain of his time; he therefore left his profession and constructed the first modern reasoned system of philosophy. He started with universal doubt and asked: What is there of which I am absolutely certain? This led him to the famous dictum *Cogito, ergo sum*, on which as basis he built up his whole system on strictly commonsense lines. Descartes exercised in France a tremendous influence, and when Charles II came to the throne in 1660 most of his courtiers, having been with him in exile, were imbued with the cult of reason. One result of this was the formation of the Royal Society soon after the Restoration. Its purpose was to apply the experimental method to natural science, and in the manifesto of the Society Dr. Sprat gives an unmistakable hint that the records of experiments were to be simply written. The formation of the Royal Society only expresses one side of this movement. The same principle was extended to every kind of activity. The supreme court of appeal of the age was commonsense. 'Is this reasonable?' was the test. In other words, men's outlook was prosaic; they lacked imagination. That being so, the Elizabethan prose period which they had inherited fell into disuse. Only the breath of Poetry could vitalise its cumbrous mechanism, and poetry was alien to the Restoration.

A new prose style grew up, therefore, the characteristics of which were clearness and precision. The long intricate sentence gave place to a number of short periods, infinitely more suitable for everyday purposes and for accurate statement. In this department of Restoration literature, as in every other, we find John Dryden supreme, and the reader, in perusing the extract given below, must remember that, though it illustrates in the simplicity of its sentence construction the point made above, yet it was written by one of the greatest masters of English prose, and has beauties which the average Restoration prose-writer never imagined:

And this, Sir, calls to my remembrance the beginning of your discourse, where you told us we should never find the audience

favourable to this kind of writing till we could produce as good plays in rhyme as Ben Jonson, Fletcher and Shakespeare had writ out of it. But it is to raise envy to the living, to compare them with the dead. They are honoured, and almost adored by us, as they deserve; neither do I know any so presumptuous of themselves as to contend with them. Yet give me leave to say thus much, without injury to their ashes; that not only we shall never equal them, but they could never equal themselves, were they to rise and write again. We acknowledge them our fathers in wit; but they have ruined their estates themselves, before they came to their children's hands. There is scarce an humour, a character, or any kind of plot, which they have not blown upon. All comes sullied or wasted to us; and were they to entertain this age, they could not make so plenteous treatments out of such decayed fortunes. This, therefore, will be a good argument to us, either not to write at all, or to attempt some other way. There is no bays to be expected in their walks: *tentanda via est, qua me quoque possum tollere humo.*

This way of writing in verse they have only left free to us; our age is arrived to a perfection in it which they never knew; and which (if we may guess by what of theirs we have seen in verse, as The Faithful Shepherdess and Sad Shepherd) 'tis probable they never could have reached. For the genius of every age is different; and though ours excel in this, I deny not but that to imitate Nature in that perfection which they did in prose is a greater commendation than to write in verse exactly. (Dryden: *Essay of Dramatic Poesy.*)

Before continuing I find it impossible to refrain from quoting part of Dr. Johnson's criticism of Dryden's prose: 'The clauses are never balanced, nor the periods modelled: every word seems to drop by chance, though it falls into its proper place. Nothing is cold or languid; the whole is airy, animated, and vigorous; what is little, is gay; what is great, is splendid. . . . Though all is easy, nothing is feeble; though all seems careless, there is nothing harsh; and though since his earlier works more than a century has passed, they have nothing yet uncouth or obsolete.' The last remark applies to-day after a lapse of two hundred and sixty years. In fact, under Dryden, English prose broke away from the long involved sentence, and attained a high degree of lucidity But the end was not yet. The cult of Reason persisted; men's

minds became increasingly prosaic; Science grew more accurate; the desire for simplicity and directness increased throughout the Restoration period, and reached its climax in the reign of Anne among the Augustans.

The Prose of Swift

It is during the reign of Anne that prose came into its kingdom. During the Middle Ages every subject, suitable or otherwise, was forced through the metrical mill; later, prose was merely used for decidedly inferior subjects, such as controversy affecting the people. At last, however, it was recognised that of dignified subjects only some were suitable for metrical treatment, and that for others prose was more effective. This process of emancipation was helped a great deal by political circumstances. Parliament had at last asserted its power, consequently it no longer sufficed for politicians to influence the Court circle; in order to carry through their policy, Parliament, drawn from the country squires and moneyed middle classes, had to be cajoled. As a result we find the beginning of the Press, for the most part in the shape of weekly periodicals, and a great importance attached to pamphlets, and, consequently, to pamphleteers.

It must suffice here to advert briefly to three writers who may be taken to represent the three chief divisions of Augustan prose, but it is necessary to remember that each of these is supreme in his own kind in his own generation, if not in all succeeding ones. We are not discussing Queen Anne mediocrity, but Augustan genius. If we consider first the prose written for the cultured section of society, the master is Addison, whose work is so well known that little need be said here, except that the characteristic of his manner is urbanity, of his style, limpidity. In most of his work Addison was carrying out a work of social reform, attempting to improve and educate fashionable London, and this sufficiently accounts for the courteous appeal of his manner, but nothing will explain the delight of his style. It resembles Dryden's in that, as Johnson says of the latter, 'the clauses are never balanced, nor the periods modelled: every word seems to drop by chance, though it falls into its proper place,' but it differs because it has less

driving energy than Dryden's and also because the sentence is generally shorter and always simpler in construction.

The following must suffice as an example of Addison's style (*Spectator*, No. 291):

> A true critic ought rather to dwell upon excellences than imperfections, to discover the concealed beauties of a writer, and communicate to the world such things as are worth their observation. The most exquisite words and finest strokes of an author are those which very often appear the most doubtful and exceptional to a man who wants a relish for polite learning; and they are these, which a sour undistinguishing critic generally attacks with the greatest violence. Tully observes, that it is very easy to brand or fix a mark upon what he calls *verbum ardens*, or as it may be rendered into English, 'a glowing bold expression,' and to turn it into ridicule by a cold ill-natured criticism. A little wit is equally capable of exposing a beauty, and of aggravating a fault; and though such a treatment of an author naturally produces indignation in the mind of an understanding reader, it has, however, its effect among the generality of those whose hands it falls into: the rabble of mankind being very apt to think that every thing which is laughed at, with any mixture of wit, is ridiculous in itself.
>
> Such a mirth as this is always unseasonable in a critic, as it rather prejudices the reader than convinces him, and is capable of making a beauty, as well as a blemish, the subject of derision. A man who cannot write with wit on a proper subject is dull and stupid; but one who shews it in an improper place is as impertinent and absurd. Besides, a man who has the gift of ridicule is apt to find fault with any thing that gives him an opportunity of exerting his beloved talent, and very often censures a passage, not because there is any fault in it, but because he can be merry upon it. Such kinds of pleasantry are very unfair and disingenuous in works of criticism, in which the greatest masters, both ancient and modern, have always appeared with a serious and instructive air. . . .
>
> I shall conclude this paper with a story out of Boccolini, which sufficiently shows us the opinion that judicious author entertained of the sort of critics I have been here mentioning. A famous critic, says he, having gathered together all the faults of an eminent poet, made a present of them to Apollo, who received them very graciously, and resolved to make the author a suitable return for the trouble he had been at in collecting them. In order to this, he set before him a sack of wheat, as it had been just threshed out of the sheaf. He then bid him pick out the chaff from among the

corn, and lay it aside by itself. The critic applied himself to the task with great industry and pleasure, and after having made the due separation, was presented by Apollo with the chaff for his pains.

We have taken Addison as representing cultured Augustan prose, and have said that one of his main purposes was to educate and improve. Defoe, the next writer to be considered, was above all things popular, and his one object seems to have been verisimilitude.

Defoe was a political occasional writer, and to his activities it is to be feared that little dignity attaches. He supported both Whigs and Tories, and seems at one period to have taken pay from both at once. His power as a writer lay in his extraordinary capacity for producing fiction which had every appearance of truth. To do this he made his statements with a vast assumption of ingenuousness, conveying a strong impression that the speaker is a worthy honest fellow who knows no guile ; he also makes use of a multitude of details, all of which, as it were accidentally, confirm what he wishes his reader to believe. And his style agrees with this method. It has no pretensions and no adornments, but is simply the speech of a none too cultured person with a turn for words. There is no need to give an extract from him, for everyone has a copy of *Robinson Crusoe*, and it will be sufficient to say that Defoe makes fiction seem real by the invention of entirely probable detail, and by the plausibility of his style. In fact, every work of his is a variant of the confidence trick and undertaken for the same purpose, namely to impress and so make money.

Swift shares some characteristics with both Addison and Defoe, but stands apart from each. For instance, Addison was ironical and a satirist in a mild way. Defoe was not. Even in the famous pamphlet *The Shortest Way with Dissenters* it seems probable that he was not indulging in irony. Rather he wrote out the opinions of the extremists of one party in the hope of disgusting the moderates of both. Generally in his work there is no sign of irony. Now irony was the Dean's most habitual mode of thought—an irony far more savage than Addison's was pleasant—yet in his style he approaches nearer to Defoe. Anything simpler or more unassuming

it is difficult to imagine, and it possesses to the full Defoe's disarming qualities of appeal. In Swift and Defoe is reached the high-water mark of that simplicity to which we have seen English prose tending. Nor do they differ in diction as much as we should expect from the fact that Swift was much the more learned of the two. They were both in the habit of addressing a wide audience, and Swift, therefore, made a habit of the plain man's manner. So far as breaches of grammar and such details are concerned, Swift was the more guilty. Both of them relied for their effect upon an appearance of truth carefully executed even in the smallest details, but there is between them a difference which places Swift upon an entirely higher plane.

Defoe is at great pains to persuade the reader that everything he says is true, and consequently takes care that nothing he presents shall be impossible. In only one of his works does he depart from this principle, and the task he then set himself of inducing belief in a visit to earth of a person already dead was probably in those days not so very difficult. Generally Defoe was very careful to remove obstacles from the path of belief. He has a great skill in producing an effect of verisimilitude—granted ; but he takes no unnecessary risks by introducing improbabilities into his scheme.

Swift's art in the *Travels* is of a higher type than this. By means very similar to those employed by Defoe, i.e. by careful obtrusion of plausible detail, he makes his readers accept what is highly improbable. Both the conception of *Gulliver's Travels* and his method of treatment imply a high degree of imagination ; Defoe shows most marked lack of this quality, for which he substitutes a most efficient realism.

To begin first with main ideas, the plot of *Robinson Crusoe* is not difficult to imagine ; even had it been so, there was the story of Alexander Selkirk at hand as an inspiration. The case is different with the *Travels*. Johnson, with his usual unfairness to Swift, says that once you have thought of little men and big men the rest is easy. Consider first the 'once.' Many men in many ages have satirised mankind, but none of these thought of so peculiarly effective a method as to look at human affairs from both ends of a telescope as someone has

put it. To look upon the race as it would appear to giants ten times greater both in physical and mental stature, gives opportunity for most cruel satire, while the reduction of men to pygmies makes their life appear a mere burlesque. The second is laughter-raising in the highest degree, the first gives unlimited scope for contempt.

If Swift has far surpassed Defoe in the invention of his story, he has given equal proofs of superior imagination in the conduct of it. His problem is to produce the same effect of extreme naturalness under circumstances vastly more difficult. The central facts of Crusoe's situation are easily conceivable by anyone; the main assumption of Swift is entirely outside of human experience, and each one of those details he gives which seem so natural and even necessary is in truth an admirable effort of the imagination. If the reader is unconvinced and still agrees with Dr. Johnson that the rest is easy, let him try to write in Defoe's manner an account of a shipwrecked man, armed only with a pocket-knife, making himself a dug-out on an island totally devoid of vegetation; and then, when he is fully recovered from the effort of achieving one-tenth of Defoe's effect, let him describe Gulliver, during a civil war in Brobdingnag, chosen on account of his diminutive stature to carry a message from the emperor to the capital, slipping through the rebel host in the midst of a hand-to-hand combat. Let him try particularly to introduce some graphic touches similar to that of Swift, when he says that after Gulliver had displayed his skill in sailing, his boat was 'hung . . . on a nail to dry.' The measure of his success, with the work of Swift to guide him, will give him some idea of the greatness of that writer's achievement, who had no model and who was further hampered because, his work being a satire, a great part of what he wrote must have double point.

The Dean's style, then, in its exceeding plainness approaches very closely to that of Defoe, but in his irony and imaginative power he has more in common with Addison. It is not, however, to be supposed that they are alike except in the joint possession of varieties of these powers. Delicacy, elegance, fancy, are Addison's characteristics; instead of these the Dean has fierce irony, direct plainness of style and stark imagination.

GULLIVER'S TRAVELS

THE story of the *Travels* goes back to the years 1713–14, when Swift was in London. His chief friends there, apart from politicians, were the leading writers and wits of the day, a leader among whom was Pope, although he was then very young. At his suggestion was formed a club, known as the Scriblerus Club, the members of which were to write conjointly a satire on literary foolishness. The subject was to be a mythical Martin Scriblerus 'that had dipped into every art and science, but injudiciously in each.' His misadventures in the arts were to be handled by Pope; Arbuthnot, a brilliant physician and wit, noted for geniality, was to deal with the sciences; and Swift, because of his political experience, with affairs. The scheme was never carried out quite as arranged, although in 1727 and 1741 fragments of the work appeared, but each of the three partners produced a work in the spirit of the design. Pope kept nearest it in his *Dunciad*, and Arbuthnot wrote part of the *Memoirs of Martin Scriblerus*, produced by himself and Pope in 1741. Swift contributed to some fragments published under the title of *Miscellanies* in 1727, but the real result of the plan with him was *Gulliver's Travels.*

When he retired in 1714 to his Deanery in Ireland, he was in the mood for satire, and extended his original plan to cover a general attack on mankind. Its composition probably occupied his spare moments from 1714 to 1725, but there is little evidence to indicate at what periods the various parts were written, though there are indications that its progress was well known to his friends. The earliest definite reference seems to be in a letter written to Swift by Bolingbroke in January 1721, which contains the sentence 'I long to see your *Travels.*' In an undated letter which belongs either to 1720 or 1722 Vanessa makes an unmistakable reference to Gulliver's

adventure with the monkey. On September 29, 1725, Swift writes to Pope: 'I have employed my time, besides ditching, in finishing, correcting, amending and transcribing my *Travels*, in four parts complete, newly augmented, and intended for the press, when the world shall deserve them, or rather, when a printer shall be found brave enough to venture his ears.' At this time, therefore, the *Travels* were finished.

In the summer of 1726 Swift brought the MS. to England when coming on a visit to Pope, and sent part of it in August to Benjamin Motte of Fleet Street, communicating with him by letter above the signature of Richard Sympson, never allowing his own name to appear. This was necessary, for the press laws were very severe. Even after its appearance Swift and his friends, in private letters, kept up the pretence that it was written by a third person, a quite necessary precaution, for in those days postal officials were notoriously informers.

Swift offered the publisher £200, and he agreed to print. But the book was unfortunate in the press. Before the proofs were ready, Swift was recalled to Ireland by Stella's illness, and the first edition appeared uncorrected in his absence. Not only was it carelessly set up, but evidently Motte took fright at some of Swift's more daring passages, and tampered with the text. Notwithstanding this handicap it had a great and immediate success. Gay and Pope on November 17 wrote: [The book] 'has been the conversation of the whole town ever since [it came out]. The whole impression sold in a week. . . . From the highest to the lowest it is universally read, from the cabinet-council to the nursery . . . and the whole town, men, women and children, are full of it.' A second edition was, therefore, required in the next year, 1727, but in spite of protests the printer refused to restore Swift's text in the mangled passages, and only corrected minor errors. Editions were published in Dublin in 1726 and 1727, but merely reproduced the texts of Motte. In 1735 Faulkner, a Dublin printer, brought out an edition against Swift's will—but when he persisted in publishing, Swift insisted on his restoring the text from an MS. he provided. As, however, the Dean did not correct the proofs, the text has no authority. Of all the editions of this work which appeared during Swift's life,

he seems not to have read the proofs of one, so that there is no really reliable text. Fortunately, however, there exists a copy of the first edition which is interleaved with Swift's corrections copied by his friend Charles Ford. But Ford, writing in 1733 to Swift, says: 'I will try to get one [a copy] of the second edition, which is much more correct than the first, and transcribe all the alterations more clearly.' Since the second edition is much more correct, it seemed that the best plan for this edition was to adopt the text of the second, making all the corrections given in the interleaved copy of the first. This has accordingly been done.

Every work of Swift owes its appeal less to the art it displays, though sometimes this is very great, than to the peculiar force with which Swift's dominating personality presents his outlook on life, and any attempt at appreciating his writings must start from an understanding of his character. First of all he was a born ruler, and seems to have dominated every person with whom he came in contact. As a natural consequence of this power, being human, he became arrogant, and any opposition would fire him to a white heat of fury. The next point to realise is that he was essentially honest and straightforward, and at the same time gifted with most acute perception. It follows that the Dean was a disappointed man, because he had little to rule, and a consciousness of great powers; that the sham and trickery which form no small part of human affairs, and which were a necessary equipment for success in Augustan times, affected him in two ways. In the first place he was stung to fury, because he could not put a stop to it, and also he was tormented (the word is used advisedly) by sympathy for those who suffered under it. He had, moreover, a great contempt for men, including himself. A last important point is that all these feelings were intense to the point of laceration. From all this it is clear that whatever pleasure Swift may have derived from life had a background of sheer pessimism, and during the period of composition of the *Travels* the health of Stella, who was the spring of most of his happiness, became steadily worse, with the result that the gloom in Swift's mind grew more dense.

The four books of *Gulliver's Travels* record the rapid

encroachment of this black pessimism. The first two books are very pleasant to read. One feels, as Sir Leslie Stephen has it, that Swift is amused as well as amusing. The third is less satisfactory. It is clear that Swift's temper is getting out of control, and is disturbing his art. The fable is inferior in invention, the portions of it are connected rather than united, the wit is less polished and more savage. The fourth book, which when fully weighed can be pronounced nothing less than ferocious, contains a great stroke in imagining horses to be the superior race, but, though terribly effective, this makes the interest of the story less than in the first two books, as the situation is often patently impossible.

To take almost any other prose classic of a similar length and cut it into halves, dealing only with the first, would give an effect of sheer mutilation, but the fact that this edition includes only the first two books of the *Travels* is little, if at all, to be regretted ; partly because we are spared the task of considering Benjamin Motte's tamperings with the text, which occurred in the later books ; partly because the savagery of the later books so frequently produces sadness rather than pleasure ; but principally because the unity of the work is not disturbed thereby.

It is evident that Books I and II constituted the original plan. Books III and IV were added later, and the scheme of them, in spite of the high degree of rather devilish ingenuity displayed in the conception of Book IV, is inferior. On the other hand, the design [1] of Books I and II is appropriate in a very high degree. It achieves an effect of contrast which gives balance to the work, and at the same time maintains an absolute unity of idea, for the point of view in the two parts is essentially the same—the pettiness of human affairs when subjected to the scrutiny of a race constructed in more generous proportions. In Book I it is Gulliver who gazes in grave wonder at the antics of minute humans ; in Book II it is not the Brobdingnagians who are clumsy and oversized, but Gulliver and his kind who are contemptible and comic in their lack of physical and moral stature.

The feat of imagination which the conception of the *Travels*

[1] For the great originality of this, see p. xxxviii.

involves has already been dealt with, as well as the invention of detail which renders the conduct of the fable so convincing.[1] There remains only to point out the peculiarly prosaic type of Swift's imagination. Once he had made his plan, his object was to make the narrative persuasive by the invention of plausible detail. The result is that some of his highest efforts are what purport to be rather insignificant details. For instance, in an account of an interview with a Lilliputian who comes to warn him that his life is in danger, Gulliver says that, as the person was anxious not to have his visit known, 'the chairmen were dismissed ; I put the chair, with his Lordship in it, into my coat pocket . . . fastened the door of my house, placed the chair on the table . . . and sat down by it.' With this fresh in one's mind there is no fear that the 'dangers' to Gulliver which the diminutive lord recounts will be regarded as other than burlesque.

In conclusion a word must be said about the universal appeal of the *Travels*. Pope, in a letter already quoted,[2] testifies to the fact when it was but just published ; the same is true to-day. Children delight in its incident without a thought of any ulterior meaning ; cynics chuckle over its biting satire ; political theorists have testified to the soundness of the views it contains ; and any judicious reader must rejoice in the sheer beautiful workmanship of it. Faults can, of course, be found in it, especially in matters of taste. Some passages (which are omitted from this edition) are frankly disgusting, but in passing judgment upon the author it must always be remembered that, although he occasionally allowed his anger to carry him beyond the confines of decency, that anger was caused by a real hatred of hypocrisy and evil doing, and that the revolting images he occasionally used must be taken as the measure of his own disgust at evil, for the fastidious cleanliness of his personal habits and of his mode of life was notorious among his contemporaries, who were much less particular and more unbridled.

[1] See this Introduction, pp. xxxviii and xxxix. [2] See p. xlii.

LIST OF SUBJECTS FOR ESSAYS

1. CHAPTER IV of the *Voyage to Brobdingnag* has been purposely left very free from comment in this edition. Write notes on (i) any point in this which you find interesting or amusing, taking care to make clear exactly what interests or amuses you. It does not matter if your note is long or clumsy ; make certain that you explain your point of view. (ii) Grammatical errors. Correct these and make any comment which occurs to you. (iii) Historical references.

Do not attempt the whole chapter at a sitting. One page will be more than sufficient.

2. Discuss Swift's political position.

3. Compare the King of Lilliput with the King of Brobdingnag (*a*) as a monarch ; (*b*) as a man.

4. What are the chief traits in Gulliver's character ?

5. Select a passage from the text and compose an imaginary portrait of Swift writing it. Use the hint given in a note as to his personal appearance. Remember the following points : he is writing at night—clerical garb—candle—handwriting small to economise paper—country place near Dublin—his looks as he writes certain passages.

6. Swift's art as shown in the *Travels*. Give quotations to prove your points.

7. What were the causes of Swift's power during the period 1710–14 ?

8. Write the first exercise suggested on p. xxxix of the Introduction, first reading some part of *Robinson Crusoe*.

9. Write the second exercise suggested on p. xxxix of the Introduction.

TRAVELS
INTO SEVERAL
Remote Nations
OF THE
WORLD.

In FOUR PARTS.

By *LEMUEL GULLIVER*,
First a SURGEON, and then a CAPTAIN of ſeveral SHIPS.

To which are prefix'd,
Several Copies of VERSES Explanatory and Commendatory; never before printed.

VOL. I.

The SECOND EDITION.

LONDON:
Printed for BENJ. MOTTE, *at the* Middle Temple Gate *in* Fleet-ſtreet. MDCCXXVII.

A LETTER FROM CAPTAIN GULLIVER TO HIS COUSIN SYMPSON[1]

I HOPE you will be ready to own publicly, whenever you shall be called to it, that by your great and frequent urgency you prevailed on me to publish a very loose and uncorrect account of my travels ; with direction to hire some young gentlemen of either university to put them in order, and correct the style, as my cousin Dampier did by my advice, in his book called *A Voyage Round the World*. But I do not remember I gave you power to consent that any thing should be omitted, and much less that any thing should be inserted : therefore, as to the latter, I do here renounce every thing of that kind ; particularly a paragraph about her Majesty the late Queen Anne, of most pious and glorious memory ; although I did reverence and esteem her more than any of human species. But you, or your interpolator, ought to have considered, that as it was not my inclination, so was it not decent to praise any animal of our composition before my master Houyhnhnm : and besides the fact was altogether false ; for to my knowledge, being in England during some part of her Majesty's reign, she did govern by a chief minister ; nay, even by two successively ; the first whereof was the Lord of Godolphin, and the second the Lord of Oxford ; so that you have made me *say the thing that was not*. Likewise, in the account of the Academy of Projectors, and several passages of my discourse to my master Houyhnhnm, you have either omitted some material circumstances, or minced or changed them in such a manner, that I do hardly know my own work. When I formerly hinted to you something of this in a letter, you were pleased to answer that you were afraid of giving offence ; that people in power were very watchful over the press, and apt not only to interpret, but to

[1] From the Dublin edition of 1735.

punish every thing which looked like an *innuendo* (as I think you called it). But pray, how could that which I spoke so many years ago, and at about five thousand leagues distance, in another reign, be applied to any of the Yahoos who now are said to govern the herd; especially at a time when I little thought on or feared the unhappiness of living under them? Have not I the most reason to complain, when I see these very Yahoos carried by Houhynhnms in a vehicle, as if these were brutes, and those the rational creatures? And indeed, to avoid so monstrous and detestable a sight was one principal motive of my retirement hither.

Thus much I thought proper to tell you in relation to yourself, and to the trust I reposed in you.

I do in the next place complain of my own great want of judgement, in being prevailed upon by the entreaties and false reasonings of you and some others, very much against my own opinion, to suffer my travels to be published. Pray bring to your mind how often I desired you to consider, when you insisted on the motive of public good; that the Yahoos were a species of animals utterly incapable of amendment by precepts or examples: and so it hath proved; for instead of seeing a full stop put to all abuses and corruptions, at least in this little island, as I had reason to expect: behold, after above six months warning, I cannot learn that my book hath produced one single effect according to my intentions: I desired you would let me know by a letter, when party and faction were extinguished; judges learned and upright; pleaders honest and modest, with some tincture of common sense; and Smithfield blazing with pyramids of law-books; the young nobility's education entirely changed; the physicians banished; the female Yahoos abounding in virtue, honour, truth and good sense; courts and levees of great ministers thoroughly weeded and swept; wit, merit and learning rewarded; all disgracers of the press in prose and verse condemned to eat nothing but their own cotton, and quench their thirst with their own ink. These and a thousand other reformations, I firmly counted upon by your encouragement; as indeed they were plainly deducible from the precepts delivered in my book. And it must be owned that seven months were a sufficient time to

correct every vice and folly to which Yahoos are subject, if their natures had been capable of the least disposition to virtue or wisdom: yet so far have you been from answering my expectation in any of your letters, that on the contrary you are loading our carrier every week with libels, and keys, and reflections, and memoirs, and second parts; wherein I see myself accused of reflecting upon great states-folk, of degrading human nature (for so they have still the confidence to style it), and of abusing the female sex. I find likewise that the writers of those bundles are not agreed among themselves; for some of them will not allow me to be author of my own travels; and others make me author of books to which I am wholly a stranger.

I find likewise that your printer hath been so careless as to confound the times, and mistake the dates of my several voyages and returns; neither assigning the true year, or the true month, or day of the month: and I hear the original manuscript is all destroyed since the publication of my book. Neither have I any copy left: however I have sent you some corrections, which you may insert, if ever there should be a second edition: and yet I cannot stand to them, but shall leave that matter to my judicious and candid readers, to adjust it as they please.

I hear some of our sea-Yahoos find fault with my sea-language, as not proper in many parts, nor now in use. I cannot help it. In my first voyages, while I was young, I was instructed by the oldest mariners, and learned to speak as they did. But I have since found that the sea-Yahoos are apt, like the land ones, to become new-fangled in their words, which the latter change every year, insomuch as I remember upon each return to my own country their old dialect was so altered that I could hardly understand the new. And I observe, when any Yahoo comes from London out of curiosity to visit me at my own house, we neither of us are able to deliver our conceptions in a manner intelligible to the other.

If the censure of Yahoos could any way affect me, I should have great reason to complain that some of them are so bold as to think my book of travels a mere fiction out of my own brain, and have gone so far as to drop hints that the Houyhnhnms

and Yahoos have no more existence than the inhabitants of Utopia.

Indeed I must confess, that as to the people of Lilliput, Brobdingrag (for so the word should have been spelt, and not erroneously Brobdingnag), and Laputa, I have never yet heard of any Yahoo so presumptuous as to dispute their being, or the facts I have related concerning them ; because the truth immediately strikes every reader with conviction. And is there less probability in my account of the Houyhnhnms or Yahoos, when it is manifest as to the latter, there are so many thousands even in this city, who only differ from their brother brutes in Houyhnhnm-land, because they use a sort of a jabber, and do not go naked ? I wrote for their amendment, and not their approbation. The united praise of the whole race would be of less consequence to me than the neighing of those two degenerate Houyhnhnms I keep in my stable ; because from these, degenerate as they are, I still improve in some virtues, without any mixture of vice.

Do these miserable animals presume to think that I am so far degenerated as to defend my veracity ? Yahoo as I am, it is well known through all Houyhnhnm-land, that by the instructions and example of my illustrious master I was able in the compass of two years (although I confess with the utmost difficulty) to remove that infernal habit of lying, shuffling, deceiving, and equivocating, so deeply rooted in the very souls of all my species, especially the Europeans.

I have other complaints to make upon this vexatious occasion ; but I forbear troubling myself or you any further. I must freely confess, that since my last return some corruptions of my Yahoo nature have revived in me by conversing with a few of your species, and particularly those of my own family, by an unavoidable necessity ; else I should never have attempted so absurd a project as that of reforming the Yahoo race in this kingdom ; but I have now done with all such visionary schemes for ever.

April 2, 1727.

THE PUBLISHER TO THE READER

THE author of these *Travels*, Mr. Lemuel Gulliver, is my ancient and intimate friend ; there is likewise some relation between us by the mother's side. About three years ago Mr. Gulliver, growing weary of the concourse of curious people coming to him at his house in Redriff, made a small purchase of land, with a convenient house, near Newark in Nottinghamshire, his native country ; where he now lives retired, yet in good esteem among his neighbours.

Although Mr. Gulliver was born in Nottinghamshire, where his father dwelt, yet I have heard him say his family came from Oxfordshire ; to confirm which, I have observed in the churchyard at Banbury, in that county, several tombs and monuments of the Gullivers.

Before he quitted Redriff, he left the custody of the following papers in my hands, with the liberty to dispose of them as I should think fit. I have carefully perused them three times : the style is very plain and simple ; and the only fault I find is, that the author, after the manner of travellers, is a little too circumstantial. There is an air of truth apparent through the whole ; and indeed the author was so distinguished for his veracity, that it became a sort of proverb among his neighbours at Redriff, when any one affirmed a thing, to say it was as true as if Mr. Gulliver had spoke it.

By the advice of several worthy persons, to whom, with the author's permission, I communicated these papers, I now venture to send them into the world, hoping they may be at least, for some time, a better entertainment to our young noblemen than the common scribbles of politics and party.

This volume would have been at least twice as large, if I had not made bold to strike out innumerable passages relating to the winds and tides, as well as to the variations and bearings

in the several voyages ; together with the minute descriptions of the management of the ship in storms, in the style of sailors : likewise the account of the longitudes and latitudes ; wherein I have reason to apprehend that Mr. Gulliver may be a little dissatisfied : but I was resolved to fit the work as much as possible to the general capacity of readers. However, if my own ignorance in sea-affairs shall have led me to commit some mistakes, I alone am answerable for them : and if any traveller hath a curiosity to see the whole work at large, as it came from the hand of the author, I shall be ready to gratify him.

As for any further particulars relating to the author, the reader will receive satisfaction from the first pages of the book.

RICHARD SYMPSON.

CONTENTS

PART I

A Voyage to Lilliput

PART II

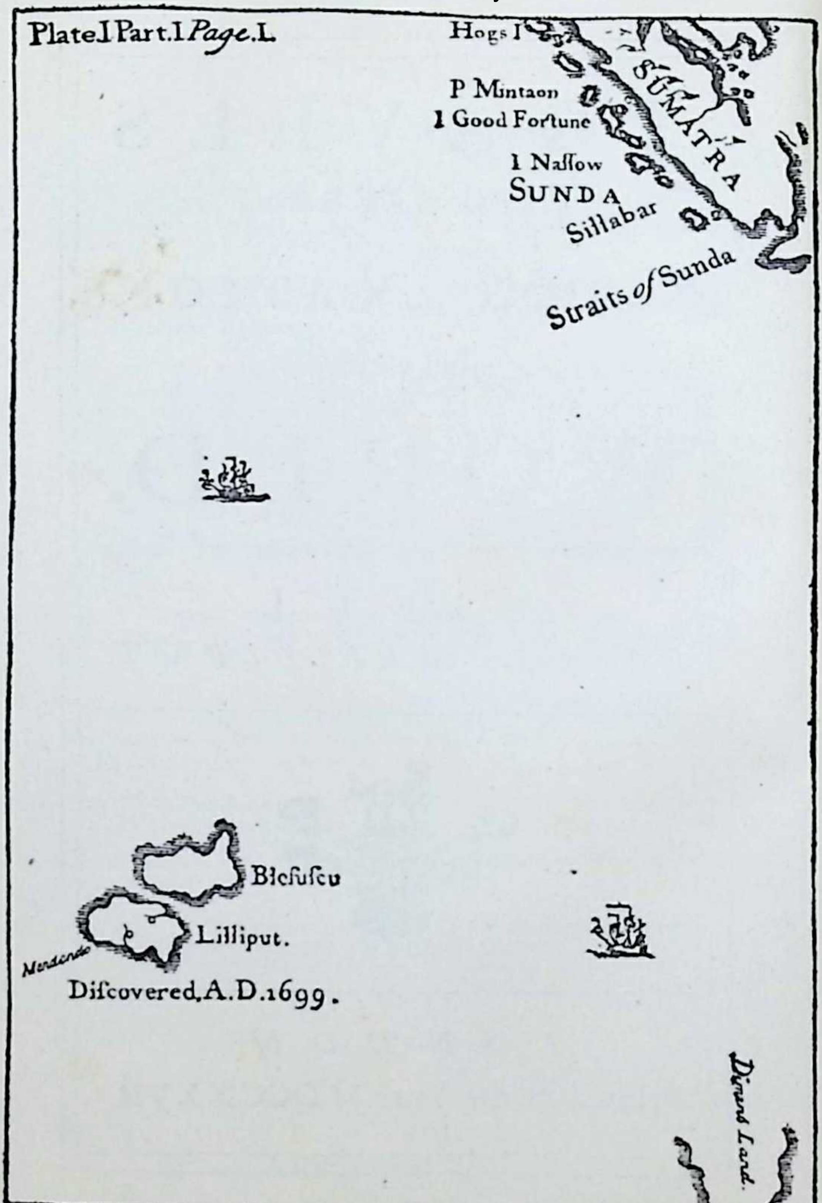
A Voyage to Brobdingnag

TRAVELS
INTO SEVERAL
Remote NATIONS
OF THE
WORLD.

PART I.

A VOYAGE to *LILLIPUT.*

LONDON:
Printed in the Year MDCCXXVII.


Plate.I Part.I Page.I.
Hogs I
P Mintaon
I Good Fortune
I Naſſow
SUNDA
Sillabar
SUMATRA
Straits of Sunda
Bleſuſcu
Lilliput.
Diſcovered, A.D.1699.
Dimens Land

GULLIVER'S TRAVELS

PART I

A VOYAGE TO LILLIPUT

CHAPTER I

The Author gives some account of himself and family. His first inducements to travel. He is shipwrecked, and swims for his life, gets safe on shore in the country of Lilliput, is made a prisoner, and carried up the country.

MY father had a small estate in Nottinghamshire; I was the third of five sons. He sent me to Emanuel College in Cambridge at fourteen years old, where I resided three years, and applied myself close to my studies; but the charge of maintaining me (although I had a very scanty allowance) being too great for a narrow fortune, I was bound apprentice to Mr. James Bates, an eminent surgeon in London, with whom I continued four years; and my father now and then sending me small sums of money, I laid them out in learning navigation, and other parts of the mathematics, useful to those who intend to travel, as I always believed it would be some time or other my fortune to do. When I left Mr. Bates, I went down to my father; where, by the assistance of him and my uncle John, and some other relations, I got forty pounds, and a promise of thirty pounds a year to maintain me at Leyden: there I studied physic two years and seven months, knowing it would be useful in long voyages.

Soon after my return from Leyden, I was recommended, by my good master Mr. Bates, to be surgeon to the *Swallow*, Captain Abraham Pannell commander; with whom I continued three years and a half, making a voyage or two into the Levant, and some other parts. When I came back, I

resolved to settle in London, to which Mr. Bates, my master, encouraged me, and by him I was recommended to several patients. I took part of a small house in the Old Jury; and being advised to alter my condition, I married Mrs. Mary Burton, second daughter to Mr. Edmund Burton hosier in Newgate-street, with whom I received four hundred pounds for a portion.

But, my good master Bates dying in two years after, and I having few friends, my business began to fail; for my conscience would not suffer me to imitate the bad practice of too many among my brethren. Having therefore consulted with my wife, and some of my acquaintance, I determined to go again to sea. I was surgeon successively in two ships, and made several voyages, for six years, to the East and West-Indies, by which I got some addition to my fortune. My hours of leisure I spent in reading the best authors, ancient and modern, being always provided with a good number of books; and when I was ashore, in observing the manners and dispositions of the people, as well as learning their language, wherein I had a great facility by the strength of my memory.

The last of these voyages not proving very fortunate, I grew weary of the sea, and intended to stay at home with my wife and family. I removed from the Old Jury to Fetter-Lane, and from thence to Wapping, hoping to get business among the sailors; but it would not turn to account. After three years expectation that things would mend, I accepted an advantageous offer from Captain William Prichard, master of the *Antelope*, who was making a voyage to the South-Sea. We set sail from Bristol May 4, 1699, and our voyage at first was very prosperous.

It would not be proper, for some reasons, to trouble the reader with the particulars of our adventures in those seas: let it suffice to inform him, that in our passage from thence to the East-Indies, we were driven by a violent storm to the north-west of Van Diemen's Land. By an observation, we found ourselves in the latitude of 30 degrees 2 minutes south. Twelve of our crew were dead by immoderate labour and ill food, the rest were in a very weak condition. On the fifth of November, which was the beginning of summer in those parts, the weather

being very hazy, the seamen spied a rock, within half a cable's length of the ship; but the wind was so strong, that we were driven directly upon it, and immediately split. Six of the crew, of whom I was one, having let down the boat into the sea, made a shift to get clear of the ship, and the rock. We rowed by my computation about three leagues, till we were able to work no longer, being already spent with labour while we were in the ship. We therefore trusted ourselves to the mercy of the waves, and in about half an hour the boat was overset by a sudden flurry from the north. What became of my companions in the boat, as well as of those who escaped on the rock, or were left in the vessel, I cannot tell; but conclude they were all lost. For my own part, I swam as fortune directed me, and was pushed forward by wind and tide. I often let my legs drop, and could feel no bottom: but when I was almost gone, and able to struggle no longer, I found myself within my depth; and by this time the storm was much abated. The declivity was so small, that I walked near a mile before I got to the shore, which I conjectured was about eight o'clock in the evening. I then advanced forward near half a mile, but could not discover any sign of houses or inhabitants; at least I was in so weak a condition, that I did not observe them. I was extremely tired, and with that, and the heat of the weather, and about half a pint of brandy that I drank as I left the ship, I found myself much inclined to sleep. I lay down on the grass, which was very short and soft, where I slept sounder than ever I remember to have done in my life, and, as I reckoned, above nine hours; for when I awaked, it was just day-light. I attempted to rise, but was not able to stir: for, as I happened to lie on my back, I found my arms and legs were strongly fastened on each side to the ground; and my hair, which was long and thick, tied down in the same manner. I likewise felt several slender ligatures across my body, from my arm-pits to my thighs. I could only look upwards; the sun began to grow hot, and the light offended my eyes. I heard a confused noise about me, but in the posture I lay, could see nothing except the sky. In a little time I felt something alive moving on my left leg, which advancing gently forward over my breast, came almost up to my chin; when bending my eyes

downwards as much as I could, I perceived it to be a human creature not six inches high, with a bow and arrow in his hands, and a quiver at his back. In the mean time, I felt at least forty more of the same kind (as I conjectured) following the first. I was in the utmost astonishment, and roared so loud, that they all ran back in a fright; and some of them, as I was afterwards told, were hurt with the falls they got by leaping from my sides upon the ground. However, they soon returned, and one of them, who ventured so far as to get a full sight of my face, lifting up his hands and eyes by way of admiration, cried out in a shrill but distinct voice, *Hekinah degul*: the others repeated the same words several times, but I then knew not what they meant. I lay all this while, as the reader may believe, in great uneasiness: at length, struggling to get loose, I had the fortune to break the strings, and wrench out the pegs that fastened my left arm to the ground; for, by lifting it up to my face, I discovered the methods they had taken to bind me, and at the same time, with a violent pull, which gave me excessive pain, I a little loosened the strings that tied down my hair on the left side, so that I was just able to turn my head about two inches. But the creatures ran off a second time, before I could seize them; whereupon there was a great shout in a very shrill accent, and after it ceased, I heard one of them cry aloud, *Tolgo phonac*; when in an instant I felt above an hundred arrows discharged on my left hand, which pricked me like so many needles; and besides they shot another flight into the air, as we do bombs in Europe, whereof many, I suppose, fell on my body (though I felt them not) and some on my face, which I immediately covered with my left hand. When this shower of arrows was over, I fell a groaning with grief and pain, and then striving again to get loose, they discharged another volley larger than the first, and some of them attempted with spears to stick me in the sides; but, by good luck, I had on me a buff jerkin, which they could not pierce. I thought it the most prudent method to lie still and my design was to continue so till night, when, my left hand being already loose, I could easily free myself: and as for the inhabitants, I had reason to believe I might be a match for the greatest armies they could bring against me, if they were all of the same size with him

that I saw. But fortune disposed otherwise of me. When the people observed I was quiet, they discharged no more arrows; but, by the noise I heard, I knew their numbers increased; and about four yards from me, over against my right ear, I heard a knocking for above an hour, like that of people at work; when turning my head that way, as well as the pegs and strings would permit me, I saw a stage erected, about a foot and a half from the ground, capable of holding four of the inhabitants, with two or three ladders to mount it: from whence one of them, who seemed to be a person of quality, made me a long speech, whereof I understood not one syllable. But I should have mentioned, that before the principal person began his oration, he cried out three times, *Langro dehul san* (these words and the former were afterwards repeated and explained to me.) Whereupon immediately about fifty of the inhabitants came, and cut the strings that fastened the left side of my head, which gave me the liberty of turning it to the right, and of observing the person and gesture of him that was to speak. He appeared to be of a middle age, and taller than any of the other three who attended him, whereof one was a page that held up his train, and seemed to be somewhat longer than my middle finger; the other two stood one on each side to support him. He acted every part of an orator, and I could observe many periods of threatenings, and others of promises, pity, and kindness. I answered in a few words, but in the most submissive manner, lifting up my left hand and both my eyes to the sun, as calling him for a witness; and being almost famished with hunger, having not eaten a morsel for some hours before I left the ship, I found the demands of nature so strong upon me, that I could not forbear showing my impatience (perhaps against the strict rules of decency) by putting my finger frequently on my mouth, to signify that I wanted food. The *Hurgo* (for so they call a great lord, as I afterwards learnt) understood me very well. He descended from the stage, and commanded that several ladders should be applied to my sides, on which above an hundred of the inhabitants mounted, and walked towards my mouth, laden with baskets full of meat, which had been provided, and sent thither by the King's orders, upon the first intelligence he received

of me. I observed there was the flesh of several animals, but could not distinguish them by the taste. There were shoulders, legs, and loins, shaped like those of mutton, and very well dressed, but smaller than the wings of a lark. I ate them by two or three at a mouthful, and took three loaves at a time, about the bigness of musket bullets. They supplied me as they could, showing a thousand marks of wonder and astonishment at my bulk and appetite. I then made another sign that I wanted drink. They found by my eating that a small quantity would not suffice me, and being a most ingenious people, they slung up with great dexterity one of their largest hogsheads, then rolled it towards my hand, and beat out the top ; I drank it off at a draught, which I might well do, for it did not hold half a pint, and tasted like a small wine of Burgundy, but much more delicious. They brought me a second hogshead, which I drank in the same manner, and made signs for more, but they had none to give me. When I had performed these wonders, they shouted for joy, and danced upon my breast, repeating several times as they did at first, *Hekinah degul.* They made me a sign that I should throw down the two hogsheads, but first warning the people below to stand out of the way, crying aloud, *Borach mivola*, and when they saw the vessels in the air, there was an universal shout of *Hekinah degul.* I confess I was often tempted, while they were passing backwards and forwards on my body, to seize forty or fifty of the first that came in my reach, and dash them against the ground. But the remembrance of what I had felt, which probably might not be the worst they could do, and the promise of honour I made them, for so I interpreted my submissive behaviour, soon drove out these imaginations. Besides, I now considered myself as bound by the laws of hospitality to a people who had treated me with so much expense and magnificence. However, in my thoughts I could not sufficiently wonder at the intrepidity of these diminutive mortals, who durst venture to mount and walk upon my body, while one of my hands was at liberty, without trembling at the very sight of so prodigious a ceeature as I must appear to them. After some time, when they observed that I made no more demands for meat, there appeared before me a person of high rank from his Imperial

Majesty. His Excellency, having mounted on the small of my right leg, advanced forwards up to my face, with about a dozen of his retinue. And producing his credentials under the Signet Royal, which he applied close to my eyes, spoke about ten minutes, without any signs of anger, but with a kind of determinate resolution ; often pointing forwards, which, as I afterwards found, was towards the capital city, about half a mile distant, whither it was agreed by his Majesty in council that I must be conveyed. I answered in few words, but to no purpose, and made a sign with my hand that was loose, putting it to the other (but over his Excellency's head, for fear of hurting him or his train) and then to my own head and body, to signify that I desired my liberty. It appeared that he understood me well enough, for he shook his head by way of disapprobation, and held his hand in a posture to show that I must be carried as a prisoner. However, he made other signs to let me understand that I should have meat and drink enough, and very good treatment. Whereupon I once more thought of attempting to break my bonds, but again, when I felt the smart of their arrows upon my face and hands, which were all in blisters, and many of the darts still sticking in them, and observing likewise that the number of my enemies increased, I gave tokens to let them know that they might do with me what they pleased. Upon this the *Hurgo* and his train withdrew with much civility and cheerful countenances. Soon after I heard a general shout, with frequent repetitions of the words, *Peplom selan*, and I felt great numbers of the people on my left side relaxing the cords to such a degree, that I was able to turn upon my right. But before this, they had daubed my face and both my hands with a sort of ointment very pleasant to the smell, which in a few minutes removed all the smart of their arrows. These circumstances, added to the refreshment I had received by their victuals and drink, which were very nourishing, disposed me to sleep. I slept about eight hours, as I was afterwards assured ; and it was no wonder, for the physicians, by the Emperor's order, had mingled a sleepy potion in the hogsheads of wine

It seems that upon the first moment I was discovered sleeping on the ground after my landing, the Emperor had early notice

of it by an express; and determined in council that I should be tied in the manner I have related (which was done in the night while I slept), that plenty of meat and drink should be sent me, and a machine prepared to carry me to the capital city.

This resolution perhaps may appear very bold and dangerous, and I am confident would not be imitated by any prince in Europe on the like occasion; however, in my opinion, it was extremely prudent, as well as generous. For supposing these people had endeavoured to kill me with their spears and arrows while I was asleep, I should certainly have awaked with the first sense of smart, which might so far have roused my rage and strength, as to have enabled me to break the strings wherewith I was tied; after which, as they were not able to make resistance, so they could expect no mercy.

These people are most excellent mathematicians, and arrived to a great perfection in mechanics by the countenance and encouragement of the Emperor, who is a renowned patron of learning. This prince hath several machines fixed on wheels for the carriage of trees and other great weights. He often builds his largest men of war, whereof some are nine foot long, in the woods where the timber grows, and has them carried on these engines three or four hundred yards to the sea. Five hundred carpenters and engineers were immediately set at work to prepare the greatest engine they had. It was a frame of wood raised three inches from the ground, about seven foot long and four wide, moving upon twenty-two wheels. The shout I heard was upon the arrival of this engine, which it seems set out in four hours after my landing. It was brought parallel to me as I lay. But the principal difficulty was to raise and place me in this vehicle. Eighty poles, each of one foot high, were erected for this purpose, and very strong cords of the bigness of packthread were fastened by hooks to many bandages, which the workmen had girt round my neck, my hands, my body, and my legs. Nine hundred of the strongest men were employed to draw up these cords by many pulleys fastened on the poles, and thus, in less than three hours, I was raised and slung into the engine, and there tied fast. All this I was told, for while the whole operation was performing, I

lay in a profound sleep, by the force of that soporiferous medicine infused into my liquor. Fifteen hundred of the Emperor's largest horses, each about four inches and a half high, were employed to draw me towards the metropolis, which, as I said, was half a mile distant.

About four hours after we began our journey, I awaked by a very ridiculous accident; for the carriage being stopped a while to adjust something that was out of order, two or three of the young natives had the curiosity to see how I looked when I was asleep; they climbed up into the engine, and advancing very softly to my face, one of them, an officer in the Guards, put the sharp end of his half-pike a good way up into my left nostril, which tickled my nose like a straw, and made me sneeze violently: whereupon they stole off unperceived, and it was three weeks before I knew the cause of my awaking so suddenly. We made a long march the remaining part of that day, and rested at night with five hundred guards on each side of me, half with torches, and half with bows and arrows, ready to shoot me if I should offer to stir. The next morning at sunrise we continued our march, and arrived within two hundred yards of the city gates about noon. The Emperor, and all his court, came out to meet us; but his great officers would by no means suffer his Majesty to endanger his person by mounting on my body.

At the place where the carriage stopped, there stood an ancient temple, esteemed to be the largest in the whole kingdom, which having been polluted some years before by an unnatural murder, was, according to the zeal of those people, looked on as profane, and therefore had been applied to common uses, and all the ornaments and furniture carried away. In this edifice it was determined I should lodge. The great gate fronting to the north was about four foot high, and almost two foot wide, through which I could easily creep. On each side of the gate was a small window not above six inches from the ground: into that on the left side, the King's smiths conveyed fourscore and eleven chains, like those that hang to a lady's watch in Europe, and almost as large, which were locked to my left leg with six and thirty padlocks. Over against this temple, on t'other side of the great highway, at

twenty foot distance, there was a turret at least five foot high. Here the Emperor ascended with many principal lords of his court, to have an opportunity of viewing me, as I was told, for I could not see them. It was reckoned that above an hundred thousand inhabitants came out of the town upon the same errand ; and in spite of my guards, I believe there could not be fewer than ten thousand, at several times, who mounted upon my body by the help of ladders. But a proclamation was soon issued to forbid it upon pain of death. When the workmen found it was impossible for me to break loose, they cut all the strings that bound me ; whereupon I rose up with as melancholy a disposition as ever I had in my life. But the noise and astonishment of the people at seeing me rise and walk, are not to be expressed. The chains that held my left leg were about two yards long, and gave me not only the liberty of walking backwards and forwards in a semi-circle ; but, being fixed within four inches of the gate, allowed me to creep in, and lie at my full length in the temple.

CHAPTER II

The Emperor of Lilliput, attended by several of the nobility, come to see the Author in his confinement. The Emperor's person and habit described. Learned men appointed to teach the Author their language. He gains favour by his mild disposition. His pockets are searched, and his sword and pistols taken from him.

WHEN I found myself on my feet, I looked about me, and must confess I never beheld a more entertaining prospect. The country round appeared like a continued garden, and the inclosed fields, which were generally forty foot square, resembled so many beds of flowers. These fields were intermingled with woods of half a stang, and the tallest trees, as I could judge, appeared to be seven foot high. I viewed the town on my left hand, which looked like the painted scene of a city in a theatre.

The Emperor was already descended from the tower, and advancing on horseback towards me, which had like to have cost him dear; for the beast, though very well trained, yet wholly unused to such a sight, which appeared as if a mountain moved before him, reared up on his hinder feet: but that prince, who is an excellent horseman, kept his seat, till his attendants ran in, and held the bridle, while his master had time to dismount. When he alighted, he surveyed me round with great admiration, but kept without the length of my chain. He ordered his cooks and butlers, who were already prepared, to give me victuals and drink, which they pushed forward in a sort of vehicles upon wheels till I could reach them. I took these vehicles, and soon emptied them all; twenty of them were filled with meat, and ten with liquor; each of the former afforded me two or three good mouthfuls, and I emptied the liquor of ten vessels, which was contained in earthen vials, into one vehicle, drinking it off at a draught; and so I did with the rest. The Empress, and young Princes of the blood, of both sexes, attended by many ladies, sat at some distance in

their chairs; but upon the accident that happened to the Emperor's horse, they alighted, and came near his person, which I am now going to describe. He is taller by almost the breadth of my nail than any of his court, which alone is enough to strike an awe into the beholders. His features are strong and masculine, with an Austrian lip and arched nose, his complexion olive, his countenance erect, his body and limbs well proportioned, all his motions graceful, and his deportment majestic. He was then past his prime, being twenty-eight years and three quarters old, of which he had reigned about seven, in great felicity, and generally victorious. For the better convenience of beholding him, I lay on my side, so that my face was parallel to his, and he stood but three yards off: however, I have had him since many times in my hand, and therefore cannot be deceived in the description. His dress was very plain and simple, and the fashion of it between the Asiatic and the European; but he had on his head a light helmet of gold, adorned with jewels, and a plume on the crest. He held his sword drawn in his hand, to defend himself, if I should happen to break loose; it was almost three inches long, the hilt and scabbard were gold enriched with diamonds. His voice was shrill, but very clear and articulate, and I could distinctly hear it when I stood up. The ladies and courtiers were all most magnificently clad, so that the spot they stood upon seemed to resemble a petticoat spread on the ground, embroidered with figures of gold and silver. His Imperial Majesty spoke often to me, and I returned answers, but neither of us could understand a syllable. There were several of his priests and lawyers present (as I conjectured by their habits) who were commanded to address themselves to me, and I spoke to them in as many languages as I had the least smattering of, which were High and Low Dutch, Latin, French, Spanish, Italian, and Lingua Franca; but all to no purpose. After about two hours the court retired, and I was left with a strong guard, to prevent the impertinence, and probably the malice of the rabble, who were very impatient to crowd about me as near as they durst, and some of them had the impudence to shoot their arrows at me as I sat on the ground by the door of my house, whereof one very narrowly missed my left eye.

But the colonel ordered six of the ringleaders to be seized, and thought no punishment so proper as to deliver them bound into my hands, which some of his soldiers accordingly did, pushing them forwards with the butt-ends of their pikes into my reach; I took them all in my right hand, put five of them into my coat-pocket, and as to the sixth, I made a countenance as if I would eat him alive. The poor man squalled terribly, and the colonel and officers were in much pain, especially when they saw me take out my penknife: but I soon put them out of fear; for, looking mildly, and immediately cutting the strings he was bound with, I set him gently on the ground, and away he ran. I treated the rest in the same manner, taking them one by one out of my pocket, and I observed both the soldiers and people were highly obliged at this mark of my clemency, which was represented very much to my advantage at court.

Towards night I got with some difficulty into my house, where I lay on the ground, and continued to do so about a fortnight; during which time the Emperor gave orders to have a bed prepared for me. Six hundred beds of the common measure were brought in carriages, and worked up in my house; an hundred and fifty of their beds sewn together made up the breadth and length, and these were four double, which however kept me but very indifferently from the hardness of the floor, that was of smooth stone. By the same computation they provided me with sheets, blankets, and coverlets, tolerable enough for one who had been so long inured to hardships as I.

As the news of my arrival spread through the kingdom, it brought prodigious numbers of rich, idle, and curious people to see me; so that the villages were almost emptied, and great neglect of tillage and household affairs must have ensued, if his Imperial Majesty had not provided, by several proclamations and orders of state, against this inconveniency. He directed that those who had already beheld me should return home, and not presume to come within fifty yards of my house without licence from court; whereby the secretaries of state got considerable fees.

In the mean time, the Emperor held frequent councils to debate what course should be taken with me; and I was

afterwards assured by a particular friend, a person of great quality, who was looked upon to be as much in the secret as any, that the court was under many difficulties concerning me. They apprehended my breaking loose, that my diet would be very expensive, and might cause a famine. Sometimes they determined to starve me, or at least to shoot me in the face, and hands with poisoned arrows, which would soon dispatch me: but again they considered, that the stench of so large a carcass might produce a plague in the metropolis, and probably spread through the whole kingdom. In the midst of these consultations, several officers of the army went to the door of the great council-chamber; and two of them being admitted, gave an account of my behaviour to the six criminals above-mentioned, which made so favourable an impression in the breast of his Majesty and the whole board in my behalf, that an Imperial Commission was issued out, obliging all the villages nine hundred yards round the city, to deliver in every morning six beeves, forty sheep, and other victuals for my sustenance; together with a proportionable quantity of bread, and wine, and other liquors; for the due payment of which his Majesty gave assignments upon his treasury. For this prince lives chiefly upon his own demesnes, seldom, except upon great occasions, raising any subsidies upon his subjects, who are bound to attend him in his wars at their own expense. An establishment was also made of six hundred persons to be my domestics, who had board-wages allowed for their maintenance, and tents built for them very conveniently on each side of my door. It was likewise ordered, that three hundred tailors should make me a suit of clothes after the fashion of the country: that six of his Majesty's greatest scholars should be employed to instruct me in their language; and, lastly, that the Emperor's horses, and those of the nobility, and troops of guards, should be frequently exercised in my sight, to accustom themselves to me. All these orders were duly put in execution, and in about three weeks I made a great progress in learning their language; during which time the Emperor frequently honoured me with his visits, and was pleased to assist my masters in teaching me. We began already to converse together in some sort; and the first words I learnt were to express my desire

that he would please to give me my liberty, which I every day repeated on my knees. His answer, as I could apprehend it, was, that this must be a work of time, not to be thought on without the advice of his council, and that first I must *Lumos kelmin pesso desmar lon emposo;* that is, swear a peace with him and his kingdom. However, that I should be used with all kindness; and he advised me to acquire, by my patience and discreet behaviour, the good opinion of himself and his subjects. He desired I would not take it ill, if he gave orders to certain proper officers to search me; for probably I might carry about me several weapons, which must needs be dangerous things, if they answered the bulk of so prodigious a person. I said, his Majesty should be satisfied, for I was ready to strip myself, and turn up my pockets before him. This I delivered part in words, and part in signs. He replied, that by the laws of the kingdom I must be searched by two of his officers; that he knew this could not be done without my consent and assistance; that he had so good an opinion of my generosity and justice, as to trust their persons in my hands: that whatever they took from me should be returned when I left the country, or paid for at the rate which I would set upon them. I took up the two officers in my hands, put them first into my coat-pockets, and then into every other pocket about me, except my two fobs, and another secret pocket I had no mind should be searched, wherein I had some little necessaries that were of no consequence to any but myself. In one of my fobs there was a silver watch, and in the other a small quantity of gold in a purse. These gentlemen, having pen, ink, and paper about them, made an exact inventory of every thing they saw; and when they had done, desired I would set them down, that they might deliver it to the Emperor. This inventory I afterwards translated into English, and is word for word as follows.

Imprimis, In the right coat-pocket of the Great Man-Mountain (for so I interpret the words *Quinbus Flestrin*) after the strictest search, we found only one great piece of coarse cloth, large enough to be a foot-cloth for your Majesty's chief room of state. In the left pocket we saw a huge silver

chest, with a cover of the same metal, which we the searchers were not able to lift. We desired it should be opened, and one of us stepping into it, found himself up to the mid leg in a sort of dust, some part whereof flying up to our faces, set us both a sneezing for several times together. In his right waistcoat-pocket we found a prodigious bundle of white thin substances, folded one over another, about the bigness of three men, tied with a strong cable, and marked with black figures; which we humbly conceive to be writings, every letter almost half as large as the palm of our hands. In the left there was a sort of engine, from the back of which were extended twenty long poles, resembling the palisados before your Majesty's court; wherewith we conjecture the Man-Mountain combs his head, for we did not always trouble him with questions, because we found it a great difficulty to make him understand us. In the large pocket on the right side of his middle-cover (so I translate the word *ranfu-lo*, by which they meant my breeches) we saw a hollow pillar of iron, about the length of a man, fastened to a strong piece of timber, larger than the pillar; and upon one side of the pillar were huge pieces of iron sticking out, cut into strange figures, which we know not what to make of. In the left pocket, another engine of the same kind. In the smaller pocket on the right side, were several round flat pieces of white and red metal, of different bulk; some of the white, which seemed to be silver, were so large and heavy, that my comrade and I could hardly lift them. In the left pocket were two black pillars irregularly shaped: we could not, without difficulty, reach the top of them as we stood at the bottom of his pocket. One of them was covered, and seemed all of a piece: but at the upper end of the other, there appeared a white round substance, about twice the bigness of our heads. Within each of these was enclosed a prodigious plate of steel; which, by our orders, we obliged him to show us, because we apprehended they might be dangerous engines. He took them out of their cases, and told us, that in his own country his practice was to shave his beard with one of these, and to cut his meat with the other. There were two pockets which we could not enter: these he called his fobs; they were two large slits cut into the top of his middle cover, but

squeezed close by the pressure of his belly. Out of the right fob hung a great silver chain, with a wonderful kind of engine at the bottom. We directed him to draw out whatever was fastened to that chain; which appeared to be a globe, half silver, and half of some transparent metal: for on the transparent side we saw certain strange figures circularly drawn, and thought we could touch them, till we found our fingers stopped by that lucid substance. He put this engine to our ears, which made an incessant noise like that of a water-mill: and we conjecture it is either some unknown animal, or the god that he worships; but we are more inclined to the latter opinion, because he assures us, (if we understood him right, for he expressed himself very imperfectly) that he seldom did any thing without consulting it: he called it his oracle, and said it pointed out the time for every action of his life. From the left fob he took out a net almost large enough for a fisherman, but contrived to open and shut like a purse and served him for the same use: we found therein several massy pieces of yellow metal, which, if they be real gold, must be of immense value.

Having thus, in obedience to your Majesty's commands, diligently searched all his pockets, we observed a girdle about his waist made of the hide of some prodigious animal; from which, on the left side, hung a sword of the length of five men; and on the right, a bag or pouch divided into two cells, each cell capable of holding three of your Majesty's subjects. In one of these cells were several globes or balls of a most ponderous metal, about the bigness of our heads, and requiring a strong hand to lift them: the other cell contained a heap of certain black grains, but of no great bulk or weight, for we could hold above fifty of them in the palms of our hands.

This is an exact inventory of what we found about the body of the Man-Mountain, who used us with great civility, and due respect to your Majesty's commission. Signed and sealed on the fourth day of the eighty-ninth moon of your Majesty's auspicious reign.

CLEFREN FRELOCK, MARSI FRELOCK.

When the inventory was read over to the Emperor, he directed me, although in very gentle terms, to deliver up the

several particulars. He first called for my scimitar, which I took out, scabbard and all. In the mean time he ordered three thousand of his choicest troops (who then attended him) to surround me at a distance, with their bows and arrows just ready to discharge: but I did not observe it, for my eyes were wholly fixed upon his Majesty. He then desired me to draw my scimitar, which, although it had got some rust by the sea-water, was in most part exceeding bright. I did so, and immediately all the troops gave a shout between terror and surprise; for the sun shone clear, and the reflection dazzled their eyes as I waved the scimitar to and fro in my hand. His Majesty, who is a most magnanimous prince, was less daunted than I could expect; he ordered me to return it into the scabbard, and cast it on the ground as gently as I could, about six foot from the end of my chain. The next thing he demanded was one of the hollow iron pillars, by which he meant my pocket-pistols. I drew it out, and at his desire, as well as I could, expressed to him the use of it; and charging it only with powder, which by the closeness of my pouch happened to escape wetting in the sea (an inconvenience against which all prudent mariners take special care to provide) I first cautioned the Emperor not to be afraid, and then I let it off in the air. The astonishment here was much greater than at the sight of my scimitar. Hundreds fell down as if they had been struck dead; and even the Emperor, although he stood his ground, could not recover himself in some time. I delivered up both my pistols in the same manner as I had done my scimitar, and then my pouch of powder and bullets; begging him that the former might be kept from the fire, for it would kindle with the smallest spark, and blow up his imperial palace into the air. I likewise delivered up my watch, which the Emperor was very curious to see, and commanded two of his tallest yeomen of the guards to bear it on a pole upon their shoulders, as draymen in England do a barrel of ale. He was amazed at the continual noise it made, and the motion of the minute-hand, which he could easily discern; for their sight is much more acute than ours; and asked the opinions of his learned men about him, which were various and remote, as the reader may well imagine without my repeating; although indeed

I could not very perfectly understand them. I then gave up my silver and copper money, my purse with nine large pieces of gold, and some smaller ones ; my knife and razor, my comb and silver snuff-box, my handkerchief and journal-book. My scimitar, pistols, and pouch, were conveyed in carriages to his Majesty's stores ; but the rest of my goods were returned me.

I had, as I before observed, one private pocket which escaped their search, wherein there was a pair of spectacles (which I sometimes use for the weakness of my eyes), a pocket perspective, and several other little conveniences ; which, being of no consequence to the Emperor, I did not think myself bound in honour to discover, and I apprehended they might be lost or spoiled if I ventured them out of my possession.

CHAPTER III

The Author diverts the Emperor and his nobility of both sexes, in a very uncommon manner. The diversions of the court of Lilliput described. The Author hath his liberty granted him upon certain conditions.

My gentleness and good behaviour had gained so far on the Emperor and his court, and indeed upon the army and people in general, that I began to conceive hopes of getting my liberty in a short time. I took all possible methods to cultivate this favourable disposition. The natives came by degrees to be less apprehensive of any danger from me. I would sometimes lie down, and let five or six of them dance on my hand. And at last the boys and girls would venture to come and play at hide and seek in my hair. I had now made a good progress in understanding and speaking their language. The Emperor had a mind one day to entertain me with several of the country shows, wherein they exceed all nations I have known, both for dexterity and magnificence. I was diverted with none so much as that of the rope-dancers, performed upon a slender white thread, extended about two foot, and twelve inches from the ground. Upon which I shall desire liberty, with the reader's patience, to enlarge a little.

This diversion is only practised by those persons who are candidates for great employments and high favour at court. They are trained in this art from their youth, and are not always of noble birth, or liberal education. When a great office is vacant either by death or disgrace (which often happens) five or six of those candidates petition the Emperor to entertain his Majesty and the court with a dance on the rope, and whoever jumps the highest without falling, succeeds in the office. Very often the chief ministers themselves are commanded to show their skill, and to convince the Emperor that they have not lost their faculty. Flimnap, the Treasurer, is allowed to cut a caper on the straight rope, at least an inch

higher than any other lord in the whole empire. I have seen him do the summerset several times together upon a trencher fixed on the rope, which is no thicker than a common packthread in England. My friend Reldresal, principal Secretary for Private Affairs, is, in my opinion, if I am not partial, the second after the Treasurer; the rest of the great officers are much upon a par.

These diversions are often attended with fatal accidents, whereof great numbers are on record. I myself have seen two or three candidates break a limb. But the danger is much greater when the ministers themselves are commanded to show their dexterity; for by contending to excel themselves and their fellows, they strain so far, that there is hardly one of them who hath not received a fall, and some of them two or three. I was assured that a year or two before my arrival, Flimnap would have infallibly broke his neck, if one of the King's cushions, that accidentally lay on the ground, had not weakened the force of his fall.

There is likewise another diversion, which is only shown before the Emperor and Empress, and first minister, upon particular occasions. The Emperor lays on the table three fine silken threads of six inches long. One is blue, the other red, and the third green. These threads are proposed as prizes for those persons whom the Emperor hath a mind to distinguish by a peculiar mark of his favour. The ceremony is performed in his Majesty's great chamber of state, where the candidates are to undergo a trial of dexterity very different from the former, and such as I have not observed the least resemblance of in any other country of the old or the new world. The Emperor holds a stick in his hands, both ends parallel to the horizon, while the candidates, advancing one by one, sometimes leap over the stick, sometimes creep under it backwards and forwards several times, according as the stick is advanced or depressed. Sometimes the Emperor holds one end of the stick, and his first minister the other; sometimes the minister has it entirely to himself. Whoever performs his part with most agility, and holds out the longest in leaping and creeping, is rewarded with the blue-coloured silk; the red is given to the next, and the green to the third, which they all

wear girt twice round about the middle ; and you see few great persons about this court who are not adorned with one of these girdles.

The horses of the army, and those of the royal stables, having been daily led before me, were no longer shy, but would come up to my very feet without starting. The riders would leap them over my hand as I held it on the ground, and one of the Emperor's huntsmen, upon a large courser, took my foot, shoe and all ; which was indeed a prodigious leap. I had the good fortune to divert the Emperor one day after a very extraordinary manner. I desired he would order several sticks of two foot high, and the thickness of an ordinary cane, to be brought me ; whereupon his Majesty commanded the master of his woods to give directions accordingly ; and the next morning six woodmen arrived with as many carriages, drawn by eight horses to each. I took nine of these sticks, and fixing them firmly in the ground in a quadrangular figure, two foot and a half square, I took four other sticks, and tied them parallel at each corner, about two foot from the ground ; then I fastened my handkerchief to the nine sticks that stood erect, and extended it on all sides till it was as tight as the top of a drum ; and the four parallel sticks rising about five inches higher than the handkerchief served as ledges on each side. When I had finished my work, I desired the Emperor to let a troop of his best horse, twenty-four in number, come and exercise upon this plain. His Majesty approved of the proposal, and I took them up one by one in my hands, ready mounted and armed, with the proper officers to exercise them. As soon as they got into order, they divided into two parties, performed mock skirmishes, discharged blunt arrows, drew their swords, fled and pursued, attacked and retired, and in short discovered the best military discipline I ever beheld. The parallel sticks secured them and their horses from falling over the stage ; and the Emperor was so much delighted, that he ordered this entertainment to be repeated several days, and once was pleased to be lifted up and give the word of command ; and, with great difficulty, persuaded even the Empress herself to let me hold her in her close chair within two yards of the stage, from whence she was able to take a full view of the whole performance. It

was my good fortune that no ill accident happened in these entertainments, only once a fiery horse that belonged to one of the captains pawing with his hoof struck a hole in my handkerchief, and his foot slipping, he overthrew his rider and himself; but I immediately relieved them both, and covering the hole with one hand, I set down the troop with the other, in the same manner as I took them up. The horse that fell was strained in the left shoulder, but the rider got no hurt, and I repaired my handkerchief as well as I could: however, I would not trust to the strength of it any more in such dangerous enterprises.

About two or three days before I was set at liberty, as I was entertaining the court with these kind of feats, there arrived an express to inform his Majesty that some of his subjects riding near the place where I was first taken up, had seen a great black substance lying on the ground, very oddly shaped, extending its edges round as wide as his Majesty's bedchamber, and rising up in the middle as high as a man; that it was no living creature, as they at first apprehended, for it lay on the grass without motion, and some of them had walked round it several times: that by mounting upon each other's shoulders, they had got to the top, which was flat and even, and stamping upon it they found it was hollow within; that they humbly conceived it might be something belonging to the Man-Mountain, and if his Majesty pleased, they would undertake to bring it with only five horses. I presently knew what they meant, and was glad at heart to receive this intelligence. It seems upon my first reaching the shore after our shipwreck, I was in such confusion, that before I came to the place where I went to sleep, my hat, which I had fastened with a string to my head while I was rowing, and had stuck on all the time I was swimming, fell off after I came to land; the string, as I conjecture, breaking by some accident which I never observed, but thought my hat had been lost at sea. I entreated his Imperial Majesty to give orders it might be brought to me as soon as possible, describing to him the use and the nature of it: and the next day the waggoners arrived with it, but not in a very good condition; they had bored two holes in the brim, within an inch and half of the edge, and fastened two

hooks in the holes ; these hooks were tied by a long cord to the harness, and thus my hat was dragged along for above half an English mile : but the ground in that country being extremely smooth and level, it received less damage than I expected.

Two days after this adventure, the Emperor having ordered that part of his army which quarters in and about his metropolis to be in a readiness, took a fancy of diverting himself in a very singular manner. He desired I would stand like a Colossus, with my legs as far asunder as I conveniently could. He then commanded his General (who was an old experienced leader, and a great patron of mine) to draw up the troops in close order, and march them under me, the foot by twenty-four in a breast, and the horse by sixteen, with drums beating, colours flying, and pikes advanced. This body consisted of three thousand foot, and a thousand horse.

I had sent so many memorials and petitions for my liberty, that his Majesty at length mentioned the matter, first in the cabinet, and then in a full council ; where it was opposed by none, except Skyresh Bolgolam, who was pleased, without any provocation, to be my mortal enemy. But it was carried against him by the whole board, and confirmed by the Emperor. That minister was *Galbet*, or Admiral of the Realm, very much in his master's confidence, and a person well versed in affairs, but of a morose and sour complexion. However, he was at length persuaded to comply ; but prevailed that the articles and conditions upon which I should be set free, and to which I must swear, should be drawn up by himself. These articles were brought to me by Skyresh Bolgolam in person, attended by two under-secretaries, and several persons of distinction. After they were read, I was demanded to swear to the performance of them ; first in the manner of my own country, and afterwards in the method prescribed by their laws ; which was to hold my right foot in my left hand, to place the middle finger of my right hand on the crown of my head, and my thumb on the tip of my right ear. But because the reader may perhaps be curious to have some idea of the style and manner of expression peculiar to that people, as well as to know the articles upon which I recovered my liberty, I have

made a translation of the whole instrument word for word, as near as I was able, which I here offer to the public.

GOLBASTO MOMAREN EVLAME GURDILO SHEFIN MULLY ULLY GUE, most mighty Emperor of Lilliput, delight and terror of the universe, whose dominions extend five thousand *blustrugs* (about twelve miles in circumference) to the extremities of the globe ; monarch of all monarchs, taller than the sons of men ; whose feet press down to the centre, and whose head strikes against the sun ; at whose nod the princes of the earth shake their knees ; pleasant as the spring, comfortable as the summer, fruitful as autumn, dreadful as winter. His most sublime Majesty proposeth to the Man-Mountain, lately arrived to our celestial dominions, the following articles, which by a solemn oath he shall be obliged to perform.

First, The Man-Mountain shall not depart from our dominions, without our licence under our great seal.

2nd, He shall not presume to come into our metropolis, without our express order ; at which time the inhabitants shall have two hours warning to keep within their doors.

3rd, The said Man-Mountain shall confine his walks to our principal high roads, and not offer to walk or lie down in a meadow or field of corn.

4th, As he walks the said roads, he shall take the utmost care not to trample upon the bodies of any of our loving subjects, their horses, or carriages, nor take any of our said subjects into his hands, without their own consent.

5th, If an express requires extraordinary dispatch, the Man-Mountain shall be obliged to carry in his pocket the messenger and horse a six days journey once in every moon, and return the said messenger back (if so required) safe to our Imperial Presence.

6th, He shall be our ally against our enemies in the Island of Blefuscu, and do his utmost to destroy their fleet, which is now preparing to invade us.

7th, That the said Man-Mountain shall, at his times of leisure, be aiding and assisting to our workmen, in helping to

raise certain great stones, towards covering the wall of the principal park, and other our royal buildings.

8th, That the said Man-Mountain shall, in two moons' time, deliver in an exact survey of the circumference of our dominions by a computation of his own paces round the coast.

Lastly, That upon his solemn oath to observe all the above articles, the said Man-Mountain shall have a daily allowance of meat and drink sufficient for the support of 1728 of our subjects, with free access to our Royal Person, and other marks of our favour. Given at our Palace at Belfaborac the twelfth day of the ninety-first moon of our reign.

I swore and subscribed to these articles with great cheerfulness and content, although some of them were not so honourable as I could have wished; which proceeded wholly from the malice of Skyresh Bolgolam the High Admiral: whereupon my chains were immediately unlocked, and I was at full liberty; the Emperor himself in person did me the honour to be by at the whole ceremony. I made my acknowledgements by prostrating myself at his Majesty's feet: but he commanded me to rise; and after many gracious expressions, which, to avoid the censure of vanity, I shall not repeat, he added, that he hoped I should prove a useful servant, and well deserve all the favours he had already conferred upon me, or might do for the future.

The reader may please to observe, that in the last article for the recovery of my liberty the Emperor stipulates to allow me a quantity of meat and drink sufficient for the support of 1728 Lilliputians. Some time after, asking a friend at court how they came to fix on that determinate number, he told me that his Majesty's mathematicians, having taken the height of my body by the help of a quadrant, and finding it to exceed theirs in the proportion of twelve to one, they concluded from the similarity of their bodies, that mine must contain at least 1728 of theirs, and consequently would require as much food as was necessary to support that number of Lilliputians. By which the reader may conceive an idea of the ingenuity of that people, as well as the prudent and exact economy of so great a prince.

CHAPTER IV

Mildendo the metropolis of Lilliput described, together with the Emperor's palace. A conversation between the Author and a principal Secretary, concerning the affairs of that empire. The Author's offers to serve the Emperor in his wars.

THE first request I made after I had obtained my liberty, was, that I might have licence to see Mildendo, the metropolis; which the Emperor easily granted me, but with a special charge to do no hurt either to the inhabitants or their houses. The people had notice by proclamation of my design to visit the town. The wall which encompassed it is two foot and an half high, and at least eleven inches broad, so that a coach and horses may be driven very safely round it; and it is flanked with strong towers at ten foot distance. I stept over the great Western Gate, and passed very gently, and sideling through the two principal streets, only in my short waistcoat, for fear of damaging the roofs and eaves of the houses with the skirts of my coat. I walked with the utmost circumspection, to avoid treading on any stragglers, that might remain in the streets, although the orders were very strict, that all people should keep in their houses at their own peril. The garret windows and tops of houses were so crowded with spectators, that I thought in all my travels I had not seen a more populous place. The city is an exact square, each side of the wall being five hundred foot long. The two great streets, which run cross and divide it into four quarters, are five foot wide. The lanes and alleys, which I could not enter, but only viewed them as I passed, are from twelve to eighteen inches. The town is capable of holding five hundred thousand souls. The houses are from three to five stories. The shops and markets well provided.

The Emperor's palace is in the centre of the city, where the two great streets meet. It is enclosed by a wall of two foot high, and twenty foot distant from the buildings. I had his

Majesty's permission to step over this wall; and the space being so wide between that and the palace, I could easily view it on every side. The outward court is a square of forty foot, and includes two other courts: in the inmost are the royal apartments, which I was very desirous to see, but found it extremely difficult; for the great gates, from one square to another, were but eighteen inches high and seven inches wide. Now the buildings of the outer court were at least five foot high, and it was impossible for me to stride over them without infinite damage to the pile, though the walls were strongly built of hewn stone, and four inches thick. At the same time the Emperor had a great desire that I should see the magnificence of his palace; but this I was not able to do till three days after, which I spent in cutting down with my knife some of the largest trees in the royal park, about an hundred yards distant from the city. Of these trees I made two stools, each about three foot high, and strong enough to bear my weight. The people having received notice a second time, I went again through the city to the palace, with my two stools in my hands. When I came to the side of the outer court, I stood upon one stool, and took the other in my hand: this I lifted over the roof, and gently set it down on the space between the first and second court, which was eight foot wide. I then stept over the buildings very conveniently from one stool to the other, and drew up the first after me with a hooked stick. By this contrivance I got into the inmost court; and lying down upon my side, I applied my face to the windows of the middle stories, which were left open on purpose, and discovered the most splendid apartments that can be imagined. There I saw the Empress and the young Princes, in their several lodgings, with their chief attendants about them. Her Imperial Majesty was pleased to smile very graciously upon me, and gave me out of the window her hand to kiss.

But I shall not anticipate the reader with farther descriptions of this kind, because I reserve them for a greater work, which is now almost ready for the press, containing a general description of this empire, from its first erection, through a long series of princes, with a particular account of their wars and politics, laws, learning, and religion: their plants and animals, their

peculiar manners and customs, with other matters very curious and useful; my chief design at present being only to relate such events and transactions as happened to the public, or to myself, during a residence of about nine months in that empire.

One morning, about a fortnight after I had obtained my liberty, Reldresal, principal Secretary (as they style him) of Private Affairs, came to my house attended only by one servant. He ordered his coach to wait at a distance, and desired I would give him an hour's audience; which I readily consented to, on account of his quality and personal merits, as well as the many good offices he had done me during my solicitations at court. I offered to lie down, that he might the more conveniently reach my ear; but he chose rather to let me hold him in my hand during our conversation. He began with compliments on my liberty; said he might pretend to some merit in it: but, however, added, that if it had not been for the present situation of things at court, perhaps I might not have obtained it so soon. For, said he, as flourishing a condition as we may appear to be in to foreigners, we labour under two mighty evils; a violent faction at home, and the danger of an invasion by a most potent enemy from abroad. As to the first, you are to understand, that for above seventy moons past there have been two struggling parties in this empire, under the names of *Tramecksan* and *Slamecksan*, from the high and low heels on their shoes, by which they distinguish themselves. It is alleged indeed, that the high heels are most agreeable to our ancient constitution: but however this be, his Majesty hath determined to make use of only low heels in the administration of the government, and all offices in the gift of the Crown, as you cannot but observe; and particularly, that his Majesty's Imperial heels are lower at least by a *drurr* than any of his court; (*drurr* is a measure about the fourteenth part of an inch). The animosities between these two parties run so high, that they will neither eat nor drink, not talk with each other. We compute the *Tramecksan*, or High-Heels, to exceed us in number; but the power is wholly on our side. We apprehend his Imperial Highness, the Heir to the Crown, to have some tendency towards the High-Heels; at least we can plainly discover one of his heels higher than the other,

which gives him a hobble in his gait. Now, in the midst of these intestine disquiets, we are threatened with an invasion from the Island of Blefuscu, which is the other great empire of the universe, almost as large and powerful as this of his Majesty. For as to what we have heard you affirm, that there are other kingdoms and states in the world inhabited by human creatures as large as yourself, our philosophers are in much doubt, and would rather conjecture that you dropped from the moon, or one of the stars ; because it is certain, that an hundred mortals of your bulk would, in a short time, destroy all the fruits and cattle of his Majesty's dominions. Besides, our histories of six thousand moons make no mention of any other regions, than the two great empires of Lilliput and Blefuscu. Which two mighty powers have, as I was going to tell you, been engaged in a most obstinate war for six and thirty moons past. It began upon the following occasion. It is allowed on all hands, that the primitive way of breaking eggs before we eat them, was upon the larger end : but his present Majesty's grandfather, while he was a boy, going to eat an egg, and breaking it according to the ancient practice, happened to cut one of his fingers. Whereupon the Emperor his father published an edict, commanding all his subjects, upon great penalties, to break the smaller end of their eggs. The people so highly resented this law, that our histories tell us there have been six rebellions raised on that account ; wherein one Emperor lost his life, and another his crown. These civil commotions were constantly fomented by the monarchs of Blefuscu ; and when they were quelled, the exiles always fled for refuge to that empire. It is computed, that eleven thousand persons have, at several times, suffered death, rather than submit to break their eggs at the smaller end. Many hundred large volumes have been published upon this controversy : but the books of the Big-Endians have been long forbidden, and the whole party rendered incapable by law of holding employments. During the course of these troubles, the Emperors of Blefuscu did frequently expostulate by their ambassadors, accusing us of making a schism in religion, by offending against a fundamental doctrine of our great prophet Lustrog, in the fifty-fourth chapter of the *Brundecral* (which is their Alcoran). This,

however, is thought to be a mere strain upon the text : for the words are these ; *That all true believers shall break their eggs at the convenient end :* and which is the convenient end, seems, in my humble opinion, to be left to every man's conscience, or at least in the power of the chief magistrate to determine. Now the Big-Endian exiles have found so much credit in the Emperor of Blefuscu's court, and so much private assistance and encouragement from their party here at home, that a bloody war hath been carried on between the two empires for six and thirty moons with various success ; during which time we have lost forty capital ships, and a much greater number of smaller vessels, together with thirty thousand of our best seamen and soldiers ; and the damage received by the enemy is reckoned to be somewhat greater than ours. However, they have now equipped a numerous fleet, and are just preparing to make a descent upon us ; and his Imperial Majesty, placing great confidence in your valour and strength, hath commanded me to lay this account of his affairs before you.

I desired the Secretary to present my humble duty to the Emperor, and to let him know, that I thought it would not become me, who was a foreigner, to interfere with parties ; but I was ready, with the hazard of my life, to defend his person and state against all invaders.

CHAPTER V

The Author, by an extraordinary stratagem, prevents an invasion. A high title of honour is conferred upon him. Ambassadors arrive from the Emperor of Blefuscu, and sue for peace.

THE Empire of Blefuscu is an island situated to the north-north-east side of Lilliput, from whence it is parted only by a channel of eight hundred yards wide. I had not yet seen it, and upon this notice of an intended invasion, I avoided appearing on that side of the coast, for fear of being discovered by some of the enemy's ships, who had received no intelligence of me, all intercourse between the two empires having been strictly forbidden during the war, upon pain of death, and an embargo laid by our Emperor upon all vessels whatsoever. I communicated to his Majesty a project I had formed of seizing the enemy's whole fleet : which, as our scouts assured us, lay at anchor in the harbour ready to sail with the first fair wind. I consulted the most experienced seamen, upon the depth of the channel, which they had often plumbed, who told me, that in the middle at high-water it was seventy *glumgluffs* deep, which is about six foot of European measure ; and the rest of it fifty *glumgluffs* at most. I walked towards the north-east coast over against Blefuscu ; and lying down behind a hillock, took out my small pocket perspective-glass, and viewed the enemy's fleet at anchor, consisting of about fifty men of war, and a great number of transports : I then came back to my house, and gave order (for which I had a warrant) for a great quantity of the strongest cable and bars of iron. The cable was about as thick as packthread, and the bars of the length and size of a knitting-needle. I trebled the cable to make it stronger, and for the same reason I twisted three of the iron bars together, binding the extremities into a hook. Having thus fixed fifty hooks to as many cables, I went back to the north-east coast, and putting off my coat, shoes, and stockings,

walked into the sea in my leathern jerkin, about half an hour before high water. I waded with what haste I could, and swam in the middle about thirty yards till I felt ground : I arrived at the fleet in less than half an hour. The enemy was so frightened when they saw me, that they leaped out of their ships, and swam to shore, where there could not be fewer than thirty thousand souls. I then took my tackling, and fastening a hook to the hole at the prow of each, I tied all the cords together at the end. While I was thus employed, the enemy discharged several thousand arrows, many of which stuck in my hands and face ; and besides the excessive smart, gave me much disturbance in my work. My greatest apprehension was for my eyes, which I should have infallibly lost, if I had not suddenly thought of an expedient. I kept among other little necessaries a pair of spectacles in a private pocket, which, as I observed before, had scaped the Emperor's searchers. These I took out and fastened as strongly as I could upon my nose, and thus armed went on boldly with my work in spite of the enemy's arrows, many of which struck against the glasses of my spectacles, but without any other effect, further than a little to discompose them. I had now fastened all the hooks, and taking the knot in my hand, began to pull ; but not a ship would stir, for they were all too fast held by their anchors, so that the boldest part of my enterprise remained. I therefore let go the cord, and leaving the hooks fixed to the ships, I resolutely cut with my knife the cables that fastened the anchors, receiving above two hundred shots in my face and hands ; then I took up the knotted end of the cables to which my hooks were tied, and with great ease drew fifty of the enemy's largest men-of-war after me.

The Blefuscudians, who had not the least imagination of what I intended, were at first confounded with astonishment. They had seen me cut the cables, and thought my design was only to let the ships run a-drift, or fall foul on each other : but when they perceived the whole fleet moving in order, and saw me pulling at the end, they set up such a scream of grief and despair, that it is almost impossible to describe or conceive. When I had got out of danger, I stopt awhile to pick out the arrows that stuck in my hands and face, and rubbed on some

of the same ointment that was given me at my first arrival, as I have formerly mentioned. I then took off my spectacles, and waiting about an hour, till the tide was a little fallen, I waded through the middle with my cargo, and arrived safe at the royal port of Lilliput.

The Emperor and his whole court stood on the shore expecting the issue of this great adventure. They saw the ships move forward in a large half-moon, but could not discern me, who was up to my breast in water. When I advanced to the middle of the channel, they were yet in more pain, because I was under water to my neck. The Emperor concluded me to be drowned, and that the enemy's fleet was approaching in a hostile manner: but he was soon eased of his fears, for the channel growing shallower every step I made, I came in a short time within hearing, and holding up the end of the cable by which the fleet was fastened, I cried in a loud voice, *Long live the most puissant Emperor of Lilliput!* This great prince received me at my landing with all possible encomiums, and created me a *Nardac* upon the spot, which is the highest title of honour among them.

His Majesty desired I would take some other opportunity of bringing all the rest of his enemy's ships into his ports. And so unmeasureable is the ambition of princes, that he seemed to think of nothing less than reducing the whole empire of Blefuscu into a province, and governing it by a Viceroy; of destroying the Big-Endian exiles, and compelling that people to break the smaller end of their eggs, by which he would remain the sole monarch of the whole world. But I endeavoured to divert him from this design, by many arguments drawn from the topics of policy as well as justice; and I plainly protested, that I would never be an instrument of bringing a free and brave people into slavery. And when the matter was debated in council, the wisest part of the ministry were of my opinion.

This open bold declaration of mine was so opposite to the schemes and politics of his Imperial Majesty, that he could never forgive it; he mentioned it in a very artful manner at council, where I was told that some of the wisest appeared, at least by their silence, to be of my opinion; but others, who were my secret enemies, could not forbear some expressions,

which by a side-wind reflected on me. And from this time began an intrigue between his Majesty and a junto of ministers maliciously bent against me, which broke out in less than two months, and had like to have ended in my utter destruction. Of so little weight are the greatest services to princes, when put into the balance with a refusal to gratify their passions.

About three weeks after this exploit, there arrived a solemn embassy from Blefuscu, with humble offers of a peace ; which was soon concluded upon conditions very advantageous to our Emperor, wherewith I shall not trouble the reader. There were six ambassadors, with a train of about five hundred persons, and their entry was very magnificent, suitable to the grandeur of their master, and the importance of their business. When their treaty was finished, wherein I did them several good offices by the credit I now had, or at least appeared to have at court, their Excellencies, who were privately told how much I had been their friend, made me a visit in form. They began with many compliments upon my valour and generosity, invited me to that kingdom in the Emperor their master's name, and desired me to show them some proofs of my prodigious strength, of which they had heard so many wonders ; wherein I readily obliged them, but shall not trouble the reader with the particulars.

When I had for some time entertained their Excellencies, to their infinite satisfaction and surprise, I desired they would do me the honour to present my most humble respects to the Emperor their master, the renown of whose virtues had so justly filled the whole world with admiration, and whose royal person I resolved to attend before I returned to my own country : accordingly, the next time I had the honour to see our Emperor, I desired his general licence to wait on the Blefuscudian monarch, which he was pleased to grant me, as I could plainly perceive, in a very cold manner ; but could not guess the reason, till I had a whisper from a certain person, that Flimnap and Bolgolam had represented my intercourse with those ambassadors as a mark of disaffection, from which I am sure my heart was wholly free. And this was the first time I began to conceive some imperfect idea of courts and ministers.

It is to be observed, that these ambassadors spoke to me by an interpreter, the languages of both empires differing as much from each other as any two in Europe, and each nation priding itself upon the antiquity, beauty, and energy of their own tongues, with an avowed contempt for that of their neighbour; yet our Emperor, standing upon the advantage he had got by the seizure of their fleet, obliged them to deliver their credentials, and make their speech in the Lilliputian tongue. And it must be confessed, that from the great intercourse of trade and commerce between both realms, from the continual reception of exiles, which is mutual among them, and from the custom in each empire to send their young nobility and richer gentry to the other, in order to polish themselves by seeing the world and understanding men and manners; there are few persons of distinction, or merchants, or seamen, who dwell in the maritime parts, but what can hold conversation in both tongues; as I found some weeks after, when I went to pay my respects to the Emperor of Blefuscu, which in the midst of great misfortunes, through the malice of my enemies, proved a very happy adventure to me, as I shall relate in its proper place.

The reader may remember, that when I signed those articles upon which I recovered my liberty, there were some which I disliked upon account of their being too servile, neither could anything but an extreme necessity have forced me to submit. But being now a *Nardac*, of the highest rank in that empire, such offices were looked upon as below my dignity, and the Emperor (to do him justice) never once mentioned them to me.

CHAPTER VI

Of the inhabitants of Lilliput; their learning, laws, and customs, the manner of educating their children. The Author's way of living in that country. His vindication of a great lady.

ALTHOUGH I intend to leave the description of this empire to a particular treatise, yet in the mean time I am content to gratify the curious reader with some general ideas. As the common size of the natives is somewhat under six inches high, so there is an exact proportion in all other animals, as well as plants and trees: for instance, the tallest horses and oxen are between four and five inches in height, the sheep an inch and a half, more or less: their geese about the bigness of a sparrow, and so the several gradations downwards till you come to the smallest, which, to my sight, were almost invisible; but nature hath adapted the eyes of the Lilliputians to all objects proper for their view: they see with great exactness, but at no great distance. And to show the sharpness of their sight towards objects that are near, I have been much pleased with observing a cook pulling a lark, which was not so large as a common fly; and a young girl threading an invisible needle with invisible silk. Their tallest trees are about seven foot high; I mean some of those in the great royal park, the tops whereof I could but just reach with my fist clenched. The other vegetables are in the same proportion; but this I leave to the reader's imagination.

I shall say but little at present of their learning, which for many ages hath flourished in all its branches among them: but their manner of writing is very peculiar, being neither from the left to the right, like the Europeans; nor from the right to the left, like the Arabians; nor from up to down, like the Chinese; nor from down to up, like the Cascagians; but aslant from one corner of the paper to the other, like ladies in England.

They bury their dead with their heads directly downwards, because they hold an opinion, that in eleven thousand moons they are all to rise again, in which period the earth (which they conceive to be flat) will turn upside down, and by this means they shall, at their resurrection, be found ready standing on their feet. The learned among them confess the absurdity of this doctrine, but the practice still continues, in compliance to the vulgar.

There are some laws and customs in this empire very peculiar; and if they were not so directly contrary to those of my own dear country, I should be tempted to say a little in their justification. It is only to be wished that they were as well executed. The first I shall mention relates to informers. All crimes against the state are punished here with the utmost severity; but if the person accused maketh his innocence plainly to appear upon his trial, the accuser is immediately put to an ignominious death; and out of his goods or lands, the innocent person is quadruply recompensed for the loss of his time, for the danger he underwent, for the hardship of his imprisonment, and for all the charges he hath been at in making his defence. Or, if that fund be deficient, it is largely supplied by the Crown. The Emperor does also confer on him some public mark of his favour, and proclamation is made of his innocence through the whole city.

They look upon fraud as a greater crime than theft, and therefore seldom fail to punish it with death; for they allege, that care and vigilance, with a very common understanding, may preserve a man's goods from thieves, but honesty has no fence against superior cunning; and since it is necessary that there should be a perpetual intercourse of buying and selling, and dealing upon credit, where fraud is permitted and connived at, or hath no law to punish it, the honest dealer is always undone, and the knave gets the advantage. I remember when I was once interceding with the King for a criminal who had wronged his master of a great sum of money, which he had received by order, and ran away with; and happening to tell his Majesty, by way of extenuation, that it was only a breach of trust; the Emperor thought it monstrous in me to offer, as a defence, the greatest aggravation of the

crime: and truly I had little to say in return, farther than the common answer, that different nations had different customs; for, I confess, I was heartily ashamed.

Although we usually call reward and punishment the two hinges upon which all government turns, yet I could never observe this maxim to be put in practice by any nation except that of Lilliput. Whoever can there bring sufficient proof that he hath strictly observed the laws of his country for seventy three moons, hath a claim to certain privileges, according to his quality and condition of life, with a proportionable sum of money out of a fund appropriated for that use: he likewise acquires the title of *Snilpall*, or Legal, which is added to his name, but does not descend to his posterity. And these people thought it a prodigious defect of policy among us, when I told them that our laws were enforced only by penalties without any mention of reward. It is upon this account that the image of Justice, in their courts of judicature, is formed with six eyes, two before, as many behind, and on each side one, to signify circumspection; with a bag of gold open in her right hand, and a sword sheathed in her left, to show she is more disposed to reward than to punish.

In choosing persons for all employments, they have more regard to good morals than to great abilities; for, since government is necessary to mankind, they believe that the common size of human understandings is fitted to some station or other, and that Providence never intended to make the management of public affairs a mystery, to be comprehended only by a few persons of sublime genius, of which there seldom are three born in an age: but they suppose truth, justice, temperance, and the like, to be in every man's power; the practice of which virtues, assisted by experience and a good intention, would qualify any man for the service of his country, except where a course of study is required. But they thought the want of moral virtues was so far from being supplied by superior endowments of the mind, that employments could never be put into such dangerous hands as those of persons so qualified; and at least, that the mistakes committed by ignorance in a virtuous disposition, would never be of such fatal consequence to the public weal, as the practices of a man whose inclinations led

him to be corrupt, and had great abilities to manage, and multiply, and defend his corruptions.

In like manner, the disbelief of a Divine Providence renders a man uncapable of holding any public station; for, since kings avow themselves to be the deputies of Providence, the Lilliputians think nothing can be more absurd than for a prince to employ such men as disown the authority under which he acts.

In relating these and the following laws, I would only be understood to mean the original institutions, and not the most scandalous corruptions into which these people are fallen by the degenerate nature of man. For as to that infamous practice of acquiring great employments by dancing on the ropes, or badges of favour and distinction by leaping over sticks and creeping under them, the reader is to observe, that they were first introduced by the grandfather of the Emperor now reigning, and grew to the present height by the gradual increase of party and faction.

Ingratitude is among them a capital crime, as we read it to have been in some other countries; for they reason thus, that whoever makes ill returns to his benefactor, must needs be a common enemy to the rest of mankind, from whom he hath received no obligation, and therefore such a man is not fit to live.

Their notions relating to the duties of parents and children differ extremely from ours. The Lilliputians will needs have it that the tenderness of parents towards their young proceeds from natural principle: for which reason, they will never allow that a child is under any obligation to his father or his mother for bringing him into the world: which, considering the miseries of human life, was neither a benefit in itself, nor intended so by his parents. Their opinion is, that parents are the last of all others to be trusted with the education of their own children: and therefore they have in every town public nurseries, where all parents, except cottagers and labourers, are obliged to send their infants of both sexes to be reared and educated when they come to the age of twenty moons, at which time they are supposed to have some rudiments of docility. These schools are of several kinds, suited to different qualities,

and to both sexes. They have certain professors well skilled in preparing children for such a condition of life as befits the rank of their parents, and their own capacities as well as inclinations. I shall first say something of the male nurseries, and then of the female.

The nurseries for males of noble birth, are provided with grave and learned professors, and their several deputies. The clothes and food of the children are plain and simple. They are bred up in the principles of honour, justice, courage, modesty, clemency, religion, and love of their country ; they are always employed in some business, except in the times of eating and sleeping, which are very short, and two hours for diversions, consisting of bodily exercises. They are dressed by men till four years of age, and then are obliged to dress themselves, although their quality be ever so great ; and the women attendants, who are aged proportionably to ours at fifty, perform only the most menial offices. They are never suffered to converse with servants, but go together in small or greater numbers to take their diversions, and always in the presence of a professor, or one of his deputies ; whereby they avoid those early bad impressions of folly and vice to which our children are subject. Their parents are suffered to see them only twice a year ; the visit is to last but an hour. They are allowed to kiss the child at meeting and parting ; but a professor, who always stands by on those occasions, will not suffer them to whisper or use any fondling expressions, or bring any presents of toys, sweetmeats, and the like.

The pension from each family for the education and entertainment of a child, upon failure of due payment, is levied by the Emperor's officers.

The nurseries for children of ordinary gentlemen, merchants, traders, and handicrafts, are managed proportionably after the same manner ; only those designed for trades are put out apprentices at eleven years old, whereas those of persons of quality continue in their exercises till fifteen, which answers to one and twenty with us : but the confinement is gradually lessened for the last three years.

In the female nurseries, the young girls of quality are educated much like the males, only they are dressed by orderly servants

of their own sex; but always in the presence of a professor or deputy, till they come to dress themselves, which is at five years old. And if it be found that these nurses ever presume to entertain the girls with frightful or foolish stories, or the common follies practised by chambermaids among us, they are publicly whipped thrice about the city, imprisoned for a year, and banished for life to the most desolate part of the country. Thus the young ladies there are as much ashamed of being cowards and fools as the men, and despise all personal ornaments beyond decency and cleanliness: neither did I perceive any difference in their education, made by their difference of sex, only that the exercises of the females were not altogether so robust; and that some rules were given them relating to domestic life, and a smaller compass of learning was enjoined them: for their maxim is, that among people of quality a wife should be always a reasonable and agreeable companion, because she cannot always be young. When the girls are twelve years old, which among them is the marriageable age, their parents or guardians take them home, with great expressions of gratitude to the professors, and seldom without tears of the young lady and her companions.

In the nurseries of females of the meaner sort, the children are instructed in all kinds of works proper for their sex, and their several degrees: those intended for apprentices are dismissed at nine years old, the rest are kept to thirteen.

The meaner families who have children at these nurseries, are obliged, besides their annual pension, which is as low as possible, to return to the steward of the nursery a small monthly share of their gettings, to be a portion for the child; and therefore all parents are limited in their expenses by the law. For the Lilliputians think nothing can be more unjust, than for people, in subservience to their own appetites, to bring children into the world and leave the burthen of supporting them on the public. As to persons of quality, they give security to appropriate a certain sum for each child, suitable to their condition; and these funds are always managed with good husbandry, and the most exact justice.

The cottagers and labourers keep their children at home, their business being only to till and cultivate the earth,

and therefore their education is of little consequence to the public; but the old and diseased among them are supported by hospitals: for begging is a trade unknown in this kingdom.

And here it may perhaps divert the curious reader, to give some account of my domestics, and my manner of living in this country, during a residence of nine months and thirteen days. Having a head mechanically turned, and being likewise forced by necessity, I had made for myself a table and chair convenient enough, out of the largest trees in the royal park. Two hundred sempstresses were employed to make me shirts, and linen for my bed and table, all of the strongest and coarsest kind they could get; which, however, they were forced to quilt together in several folds, for the thickest was some degrees finer than lawn. Their linen is usually three inches wide, and three foot make a piece. The sempstresses took my measure as I lay on the ground, one standing at my neck, and another at my mid-leg, with a strong cord extended, that each held by the end, while the third measured the length of the cord with a rule of an inch long. Then they measured my right thumb, and desired no more; for by a mathematical computation, that twice round the thumb is once round the wrist, and so on to the neck and the waist, and by the help of my old shirt, which I displayed on the ground before them for a pattern, they fitted me exactly. Three hundred tailors were employed in the same manner to make me clothes; but they had another contrivance for taking my measure. I kneeled down, and they raised a ladder from the ground to my neck; upon this ladder one of them mounted, and let fall a plumb-line from my collar to the floor, which just answered the length of my coat; but my waist and arms I measured myself. When my clothes were finished, which was done in my house (for the largest of theirs would not have been able to hold them) they looked like the patch-work made by the ladies in England, only that mine were all of a colour.

I had three hundred cooks to dress my victuals, in little convenient huts built about my house, where they and their families lived, and prepared me two dishes a-piece. I took up

twenty waiters in my hand, and placed them on the table; an hundred more attended below on the ground, some with dishes of meat, and some with barrels of wine, and other liquors, slung on their shoulders; all which the waiters above drew up as I wanted, in a very ingenious manner, by certain cords, as we draw the bucket up a well in Europe. A dish of their meat was a good mouthful, and a barrel of their liquor a reasonable draught. Their mutton yields to ours, but their beef is excellent. I have had a sirloin so large, that I have been forced to make three bits of it; but this is rare. My servants were astonished to see me eat it bones and all, as in our country we do the leg of a lark. Their geese and turkeys I usually ate at a mouthful, and I must confess they far exceed ours. Of their smaller fowl I could take up twenty or thirty at the end of my knife.

One day his Imperial Majesty, being informed of my way of living, desired that himself and his Royal Consort, with the young Princes of the blood of both sexes, might have the happiness (as he was pleased to call it) of dining with me. They came accordingly, and I placed 'em upon chairs of state on my table, just over against me, with their guards about them. Flimnap, the Lord High Treasurer, attended there likewise with his white staff; and I observed he often looked on me with a sour countenance, which I would not seem to regard, but ate more than usual, in honour to my dear country, as well as to fill the court with admiration. I have some private reasons to believe, that this visit from his Majesty gave Flimnap an opportunity of doing me ill offices to his master. That minister had always been my secret enemy, though he outwardly caressed me more than was usual to the moroseness of his nature. He represented to the Emperor the low condition of his treasury; that he was forced to take up money at great discount; that exchequer bills would not circulate under nine per cent. below par; that in short I had cost his Majesty above a million and a half of *sprugs* (their greatest gold coin, about the bigness of a spangle); and upon the whole, that it would be advisable in the Emperor to take the first fair occasion of dismissing me.

I am here obliged to vindicate the reputation of an excellent

lady, who was an innocent sufferer upon my account. The Treasurer took a fancy to be jealous of his wife, from the malice of some evil tongues, who informed him that her Grace had taken a violent affection for my person ; and the court-scandal ran for some time, that she once came privately to my lodging. This I solemnly declare to be a most infamous falsehood, without any grounds, farther than that her Grace was pleased to treat me with all innocent marks of freedom and friendship. I own she came often to my house, but always publicly, nor ever without three more in the coach, who were usually her sister and young daughter, and some particular acquaintance ; but this was common to many other ladies of the court. And I still appeal to my servants round, whether they at any time saw a coach at my door without knowing what persons were in it. On those occasions, when a servant had given me notice, my custom was to go immediately to the door ; and, after paying my respects, to take up the coach and two horses very carefully in my hands (for if there were six horses, the postillion always unharnessed four) and place them on a table, where I had fixed a moveable rim quite round, of five inches high, to prevent accidents. And I have often had four coaches and horses at once on my table full of company, while I sat in my chair leaning my face towards them ; and when I was engaged with one set the coachmen would gently drive the others round my table. I have passed many an afternoon very agreeably in these conversations. But I defy the Treasurer, or his two informers (I will name them and let 'em make their best of it) Clustril and Drunlo, to prove that any person ever came to me *incognito*, except the secretary Reldresal, who was sent by express command of his Imperial Majesty, as I have before related. I should not have dwelt so long upon this particular, if it had not been a point wherein the reputation of a great lady is so nearly concerned, to say nothing of my own ; though I then had the honour to be a *Nardac*, which the Treasurer himself is not ; for all the world knows he is only a *Clumglum*, a title inferior by one degree, as that of a Marquis is to a Duke in England, although I allow he preceded me in right of his post. These false informations, which I afterwards came to the knowledge of, by an accident not proper to mention,

made Flimnap the Treasurer show his lady for some time an ill countenance, and me a worse ; and, although he were at last undeceived and reconciled to her, yet I lost all credit with him, and found my interest decline very fast with the Emperor himself, who was indeed too much governed by that favourite

CHAPTER VII

The Author, being informed of a design to accuse him of high treason, makes his escape to Blefuscu. His reception there.

Before I proceed to give an account of my leaving this kingdom, it may be proper to inform the reader of a private intrigue which had been for two months forming against me.

I had been hitherto all my life a stranger to courts, for which I was unqualified by the meanness of my condition. I had indeed heard and read enough of the dispositions of great princes and ministers; but never expected to have found such terrible effects of them in so remote a country, governed, as I thought, by very different maxims from those in Europe.

When I was just preparing to pay my attendance on the Emperor of Blefuscu, a considerable person at court (to whom I had been very serviceable at a time when he lay under the highest displeasure of his Imperial Majesty) came to my house very privately at night in a close chair, and without sending his name, desired admittance. The chairmen were dismissed; I put the chair, with his Lordship in it, into my coat-pocket: and giving orders to a trusty servant to say I was indisposed and gone to sleep, I fastened the door of my house, placed the chair on the table, according to my usual custom, and sat down by it. After the common salutations were over, observing his Lordship's countenance full of concern, and enquiring into the reason, he desired I would hear him with patience in a matter that highly concerned my honour and my life. His speech was to the following effect, for I took notes of it as soon as he left me.

You are to know, said he, that several Committees of Council have been lately called in the most private manner on your account; and it is but two days since his Majesty came to a full resolution.

You are very sensible that Skyresh Bolgolam (*Galbet*, or

High Admiral) hath been your mortal enemy almost ever since your arrival. His original reasons I know not, but his hatred is much increased since your great success against Blefuscu, by which his glory as Admiral is obscured. This Lord, in conjunction with Flimnap the High Treasurer, whose enmity against you is notorious on account of his lady, Limtoc the General, Lalcon the Chamberlain, and Balmuff the Grand Justiciary, have prepared articles of impeachment against you, for treason, and other capital crimes.

This preface made me so impatient, being conscious of my own merits and innocence, that I was going to interrupt; when he entreated me to be silent, and thus proceeded.

Out of the gratitude for the favours you have done me, I procured information of the whole proceedings, and a copy of the articles, wherein I venture my head for your service.

Articles of Impeachment against Quinbus Flestrin (*the* Man-Mountain)

ARTICLE I

That the said Quinbus Flestrin having brought the imperial fleet of Blefuscu into the royal port, and being afterwards commanded by his Imperial Majesty to seize all the other ships of the said empire of Blefuscu, and reduce that empire to a province, to be governed by a Viceroy from hence, and to destroy and put to death not only all the Big-Endian exiles, but likewise all the people of that empire, who would not immediately forsake the Big-Endian heresy: He, the said Flestrin, like a false traitor against his most Auspicious, Serene, Imperial Majesty, did petition to be excused from the said service, upon pretence of unwillingness to force the consciences, or destroy the liberties and lives of an innocent people.

ARTICLE II

That, whereas certain ambassadors arrived from the court of Blefuscu, to sue for peace in his Majesty's court: He, the

said Flestrin, did, like a false traitor, aid, abet, comfort, and divert the said ambassadors, although he knew them to be servants to a Prince who was lately an open enemy to his Imperial Majesty, and in open war against his said Majesty.

ARTICLE III

That the said Quinbus Flestrin, contrary to the duty of a faithful subject, is now preparing to make a voyage to the court and empire of Blefuscu, for which he hath received only verbal licence from his Imperial Majesty ; and under colour of the said licence, doth falsely and traitorously intend to take the said voyage, and thereby to aid, comfort, and abet the Emperor of Blefuscu, so late an enemy, and in open war with his Imperial Majesty aforesaid.

There are some other articles, but these are the most important, of which I have read you an abstract.

In the several debates upon this impeachment, it must be confessed that his Majesty gave many marks of his great lenity, often urging the services you had done him, and endeavouring to extenuate your crimes. The Treasurer and Admiral insisted that you should be put to the most painful and ignominious death, by setting fire on your house at night, and the General was to attend with twenty thousand men armed with poisoned arrows to shoot you on the face and hands Some of your servants were to have private orders to strew a poisonous juice on your shirts, which would soon make you tear your own flesh, and die in the utmost torture. The General came into the same opinion, so that for a long time there was a majority against you. But his Majesty resolving, if possible, to spare your life, at last brought off the Chamberlain.

Upon this incident, Reldresal, principal Secretary for Private Affairs, who always approved himself your true friend, was commanded by the Emperor to deliver his opinion, which he accordingly did ; and therein justified the good thoughts you have of him. He allowed your crimes to be great, but that still there was room for mercy, the most commendable virtue in a prince, and for which his Majesty was so justly celebrated.

He said, the friendship between you and him was so well known to the world, that perhaps the most honourable board might think him partial: however, in obedience to the command he had received, he would freely offer his sentiments. That if his Majesty, in consideration of your services, and pursuant to his own merciful disposition, would please to spare your life, and only give order to put out both your eyes, he humbly conceived that by this expedient justice might in some measure be satisfied, and all the world would applaud the lenity of the Emperor, as well as the fair and generous proceedings of those who have the honour to be his counsellors. That the loss of your eyes would be no impediment to your bodily strength, by which you might still be useful to his Majesty. That blindness is an addition to courage, by concealing danger from us; that the fear you had for your eyes was the greatest difficulty in bringing over the enemy's fleet, and it would be sufficient for you to see by the eyes of the ministers, since the greatest princes do no more.

This proposal was received with the utmost disapprobation by the whole board. Bolgolam, the Admiral, could not preserve his temper, but rising up in fury said he wondered how the Secretary durst presume to give his opinion for preserving the life of a traitor: that the services you had performed, were, by all true reasons of state, the great aggravation of your crimes; and the same strength which enabled you to bring over the enemy's fleet, might serve, upon the first discontent, to carry it back: that he had good reasons to think you were a Big-Endian in your heart; and as treason begins in the heart, before it appears in overt acts, so he accused you as a traitor on that account, and therefore insisted you should be put to death.

The Treasurer was of the same opinion; he showed to what straits his Majesty's revenue was reduced by the charge of maintaining you, which would soon grow insupportable: that the Secretary's expedient of putting out your eyes was so far from being a remedy against this evil, it would probably increase it, as it is manifest from the common practice of blinding some kind of fowl, after which they fed the faster,

and grew sooner fat: that his sacred Majesty and the Council, who are your judges, were in their own consciences fully convinced of your guilt, which was a sufficient argument to condemn you to death, without the formal proofs required by the strict letter of the law.

But his Imperial Majesty, fully determined against capital punishment, was graciously pleased to say, that since the Council thought the loss of your eyes too easy a censure, some other may be inflicted hereafter. And your friend the Secretary humbly desiring to be heard again, in answer to what the Treasurer had objected concerning the great charge his Majesty was at in maintaining you, said that his Excellency, who had the sole disposal of the Emperor's revenue, might easily provide against that evil, by gradually lessening your establishment; by which, for want of sufficient food, you would grow weak and faint, and lose your appetite, and consequently decay and consume in a few months; neither would the stench of your carcass be then so dangerous, when it should become more than half diminished; and immediately upon your death, five or six thousand of his Majesty's subjects might, in two or three days, cut your flesh from your bones, take it away by cartloads, and bury it in distant parts to prevent infection, leaving the skeleton as a monument of admiration to posterity.

Thus by the great friendship of the Secretary, the whole affair was compromised. It was strictly enjoined, that the project of starving you by degrees should be kept a secret, but the sentence of putting out your eyes was entered on the books; none dissenting except Bolgolam the Admiral, who, being a creature of the Empress, was perpetually instigated by her Majesty to insist upon your death, she having borne perpetual malice against you.

In three days your friend the Secretary will be directed to come to your house, and read before you the articles of impeachment; and then to signify the great lenity and favour of his Majesty and Council, whereby you are only condemned to the loss of your eyes, which his Majesty doth not question you will gratefully and humbly submit to; and twenty of his Majesty's surgeons will attend, in order to see the operation

well performed, by discharging very sharp-pointed arrows into the balls of your eyes, as you lie on the ground.

I leave to your prudence what measures you will take; and to avoid suspicion, I must immediately return in as private a manner as I came.

His Lordship did so, and I remained alone, under many doubts and perplexities of mind.

It was a custom introduced by this prince and his ministry (very different, as I have been assured, from the practices of former times) that after the court had decreed any cruel execution, either to gratify the monarch's resentment, or the malice of a favourite, the Emperor always made a speech to his whole Council, expressing his great lenity and tenderness, as qualities known and confessed by all the world. This speech was immediately published through the kingdom; nor did any thing terrify the people so much as those encomiums on his Majesty's mercy; because it was observed that the more these praises were enlarged and insisted on, the more inhuman was the punishment, and the sufferer more innocent. And as to myself, I must confess, having never been designed for a courtier either by my birth or education, I was so ill a judge of things, that I could not discover the lenity and favour of this sentence, but conceived it (perhaps erroneously) rather to be rigorous than gentle. I sometimes thought of standing my trial, for although I could not deny the facts alleged in the several articles, yet I hoped they would admit of some extenuations. But having in my life perused many state trials, which I ever observed to terminate as the judges thought fit to direct, I durst not rely on so dangerous a decision, in so critical a juncture, and against such powerful enemies. Once I was strongly bent upon resistance, for while I had liberty, the whole strength of that empire could hardly subdue me, and I might easily, with stones, pelt the metropolis to pieces; but I soon rejected that project with horror, by remembering the oath I had made to the Emperor, the favours I received from him, and the high title of *Nardac* he conferred upon me. Neither had I so soon learned the gratitude of courtiers, to persuade myself that his Majesty's present severities quitted me of all past obligations.

At last I fixed upon a resolution, for which it is probable I may incur some censure, and not unjustly; for I confess I owe the preserving my eyes, and consequently my liberty, to my own great rashness and want of experience: because if I had then known the nature of princes and ministers, which I have since observed in many other courts, and their methods of treating criminals less obnoxious than myself, I should with great alacrity and readiness have submitted to so easy a punishment. But hurried on by the precipitancy of youth, and having his Imperial Majesty's licence to pay my attendance upon the Emperor of Blefuscu, I took this opportunity, before the three days were elapsed, to send a letter to my friend the Secretary, signifying my resolution of setting out that morning for Blefuscu pursuant to the leave I had got; and without waiting for an answer, I went to that side of the island where our fleet lay. I seized a large man of war, tied a cable to the prow, and, lifting up the anchors, I stripped myself, put my clothes (together with my coverlet, which I brought under my arm) into the vessel, and drawing it after me between wading and swimming, arrived at the royal port of Blefuscu, where the people had long expected me; they lent me two guides to direct me to the capital city, which is of the same name. I held them in my hands till I came within two hundred yards of the gate, and desired them to signify my arrival to one of the secretaries, and let him know, I there waited his Majesty's commands. I had an answer in about an hour, that his Majesty, attended by the Royal Family, and great officers of the court, was coming out to receive me. I advanced an hundred yards. The Emperor and his train alighted from their horses, the Empress and ladies from their coaches, and I did not perceive they were in any fright or concern. I lay on the ground to kiss his Majesty's and the Empress's hand. I told his Majesty that I was come according to my promise, and with the licence of the Emperor my master, to have the honour of seeing so mighty a monarch, and to offer him any service in my power consistent with my duty to my own prince; not mentioning a word of my disgrace, because I had hitherto no regular information of it, and might suppose myself wholly ignorant of any such design; neither could I reasonably conceive that

the Emperor would discover the secret while I was out of his power: wherein, however, it soon appeared I was deceived.

I shall not trouble the reader with the particular account of my reception at this court, which was suitable to the generosity of so great a prince; nor of the difficulties I was in for want of a house and bed, being forced to lie on the ground, wrapped up in my coverlet.

CHAPTER VIII

The Author, by a lucky accident, finds means to leave Blefuscu; and, after some difficulties, returns safe to his native country.

Three days after my arrival, walking out of curiosity to the north-east coast of the island, I observed, about half a league off, in the sea, somewhat that looked like a boat overturned. I pulled off my shoes and stockings, and wading two or three hundred yards, I found the object to approach nearer by force of the tide; and then plainly saw it to be a real boat, which I supposed might, by some tempest, have been driven from a ship; whereupon I returned immediately towards the city, and desired his Imperial Majesty to lend me twenty of the tallest vessels he had left after the loss of his fleet, and three thousand seamen under the command of his Vice-Admiral. This fleet sailed round, while I went back the shortest way to the coast where I first discovered the boat; I found the tide had driven it still nearer. The seamen were all provided with cordage, which I had beforehand twisted to a sufficient strength. When the ships came up, I stripped myself, and waded till I came within an hundred yards of the boat, after which I was forced to swim till I got up to it. The seamen threw me the end of the cord, which I fastened to a hole in the fore-part of the boat, and the other end to a man of war; but I found all my labour to little purpose; for being out of my depth, I was not able to work. In this necessity, I was forced to swim behind, and push the boat forwards as often as I could, with one of my hands; and the tide favouring me, I advanced so far, that I could just hold up my chin and feel the ground. I rested two or three minutes, and then gave the boat another shove, and so on till the sea was no higher than my arm-pits; and now the most laborious part being over, I took out my other cables, which were stowed in one of the ships, and

fastening them first to the boat, and then to nine of the vessels which attended me; the wind being favourable, the seamen towed, and I shoved till we arrived within forty yards of the shore; and waiting till the tide was out, I got dry to the boat, and by the assistance of two thousand men, with ropes and engines, I made a shift to turn it on its bottom, and found it was but little damaged.

I shall not trouble the reader with the difficulties I was under by the help of certain paddles, which cost me ten days making, to get my boat to the royal port of Blefuscu, where a mighty concourse of people appeared upon my arrival, full of wonder at the sight of so prodigious a vessel. I told the Emperor that my good fortune had thrown this boat in my way, to carry me to some place from whence I might return into my native country, and begged his Majesty's orders for getting materials to fit it up, together with his licence to depart; which, after some kind expostulations, he was pleased to grant.

I did very much wonder, in all this time, not to have heard of any express relating to me from our Emperor to the court of Blefuscu. But I was afterwards given privately to understand, that his Imperial Majesty, never imagining I had the least notice of his designs, believed I was only gone to Blefuscu in performance of my promise, according to the licence he had given me, which was well known at our court, and would return in a few days when that ceremony was ended. But he was at last in pain at my long absence; and after consulting with the Treasurer, and the rest of that cabal, a person of quality was dispatched with the copy of the articles against me. This envoy had instructions to represent to the monarch of Blefuscu the great lenity of his master, who was content to punish me no farther than with the loss of my eyes; that I had fled from justice, and if I did not return in two hours, I should be deprived of my title of *Nardac*, and declared a traitor. The envoy further added, that in order to maintain the peace and amity between both empires, his master expected, that his brother of Blefuscu would give orders to have me sent back to Lilliput, bound hand and foot, to be punished as a traitor.

The Emperor of Blefuscu having taken three days to consult,

returned an answer consisting of many civilities and excuses. He said, that as for sending me bound, his brother knew it was impossible; that although I had deprived him of his fleet, yet he owed great obligations to me for many good offices I had done him in making the peace. That however both their Majesties would soon be made easy; for I had found a prodigious vessel on the shore, able to carry me on the sea, which he had given order to fit up with my own assistance and direction; and he hoped in a few weeks both empires would be freed from so insupportable an incumbrance.

With this answer the envoy returned to Lilliput, and the monarch of Blefuscu related to me all that had past, offering me at the same time (but under the strictest confidence) his gracious protection, if I would continue in his service; wherein although I believed him sincere, yet I resolved never more to put any confidence in princes or ministers, where I could possibly avoid it; and therefore, with all due acknowledgements for his favourable intentions, I humbly begged to be excused. I told him that since fortune, whether good or evil, had thrown a vessel in my way, I was resolved to venture myself in the ocean, rather than be an occasion of difference between two such mighty monarchs. Neither did I find the Emperor at all displeased; and I discovered by a certain accident, that he was very glad of my resolution, and so were most of his ministers.

These considerations moved me to hasten my departure somewhat sooner than I intended; to which the court, impatient to have me gone, very readily contributed. Five hundred workmen were employed to make two sails to my boat, according to my directions, by quilting thirteen fold of their strongest linen together. I was at the pains of making ropes and cables, by twisting ten, twenty or thirty of the thickest and strongest of theirs. A great stone that I happened to find, after a long search, by the sea-shore, served me for an anchor. I had the tallow of three hundred cows for greasing my boat, and other uses. I was at incredible pains in cutting down some of the largest timber-trees for oars and masts, wherein I was, however, much assisted by his Majesty's ship-carpenters, who helped me in smoothing them, after I had done the rough work.

In about a month, when all was prepared, I sent to receive his Majesty's commands, and to take my leave. The Emperor and Royal Family came out of the palace; I lay down on my face to kiss his hand, which he very graciously gave me: so did the Empress and young Princes of the blood. His Majesty presented me with fifty purses of two hundred *sprugs* a-piece, together with his picture at full length, which I put immediately into one of my gloves, to keep it from being hurt. The ceremonies at my departure were too many to trouble the reader with at this time.

I stored the boat with the carcases of an hundred oxen, and three hundred sheep, with bread and drink proportionable, and as much meat ready dressed as four hundred cooks could provide. I took with me six cows and two bulls alive, with as many ewes and rams, intending to carry them into my own country, and propagate the breed. And to feed them on board, I had a good bundle of hay, and a bag of corn. I would gladly have taken a dozen of the natives, but this was a thing the Emperor would by no means permit; and besides a diligent search into my pockets, his Majesty engaged my honour not to carry away any of his subjects, although with their own consent and desire.

Having thus prepared all things as well as I was able, I set sail on the twenty-fourth day of September 1701, at six in the morning; and when I had gone about four leagues to the northward, the wind being at south-east, at six in the evening I descried a small island about half a league to the north-west. I advanced forward, and cast anchor on the lee-side of the island, which seemed to be uninhabited. I then took some refreshment, and went to my rest. I slept well, and I conjecture at least six hours, for I found the day broke in two hours after I awaked. It was a clear night. I ate my breakfast before the sun was up; and heaving anchor, the wind being favourable, I steered the same course that I had done the day before, wherein I was directed by my pocket-compass. My intention was to reach, if possible, one of those islands, which I had reason to believe lay to the north-east of Van Diemen's Land. I discovered nothing all that day; but upon the next, about three in the afternoon, when I had by my computation made

twenty-four leagues from Blefuscu, I descried a sail steering to the south-east; my course was due east. I hailed her, but could get no answer; yet I found I gained upon her, for the wind slackened. I made all the sail I could, and in half an hour she spied me, then hung out her ancient, and discharged a gun. It is not easy to express the joy I was in upon the unexpected hope of once more seeing my beloved country, and the dear pledges I had left in it. The ship slackened her sails, and I came up with her between five and six in the evening, September 26; but my heart leapt within me to see her English colours. I put my cows and sheep into my coat-pockets, and got on board with all my little cargo of provisions. The vessel was an English merchantman, returning from Japan by the North and South Seas; the Captain, Mr. John Biddle of Deptford, a very civil man, and an excellent sailor. We were now in the latitude of 30 degrees south; there were about fifty men in the ship; and here I met an old comrade of mine, one Peter Williams, who gave me a good character to the Captain. This gentleman treated me with kindness, and desired I would let him know what place I came from last, and whither I was bound; which I did in few words, but he thought I was raving, and that the dangers I underwent had disturbed my head; whereupon I took my black cattle and sheep out of my pocket, which, after great astonishment, clearly convinced him of my veracity. I then showed him the gold given me by the Emperor of Blefuscu, together with his Majesty's picture at full length, and some other rarities of that country. I gave him two purses of two hundred *sprugs* each, and promised, when we arrived in England, to make him a present of a cow and a sheep.

I shall not trouble the reader with a particular account of this voyage, which was very prosperous for the most part. We arrived in the Downs on the 13th of April, 1702. I had only one misfortune, that the rats on board carried away one of my sheep; I found her bones in a hole, picked clean from the flesh. The rest of my cattle I got safe on shore and set them a grazing in a bowling-green at Greenwich, where the fineness of the grass made them feed very heartily, though I had always feared the contrary: neither could I

possibly have preserved them in so long a voyage, if the Captain had not allowed me some of his best biscuit, which, rubbed to powder, and mingled with water, was their constant food. The short time I continued in England, I made a considerable profit by showing my cattle to many persons of quality, and others: and before I began my second voyage, I sold them for six hundred pounds. Since my last return, I find the breed is considerably increased, especially the sheep; which I hope will prove much to the advantage of the woollen manufacture, by the fineness of the fleeces.

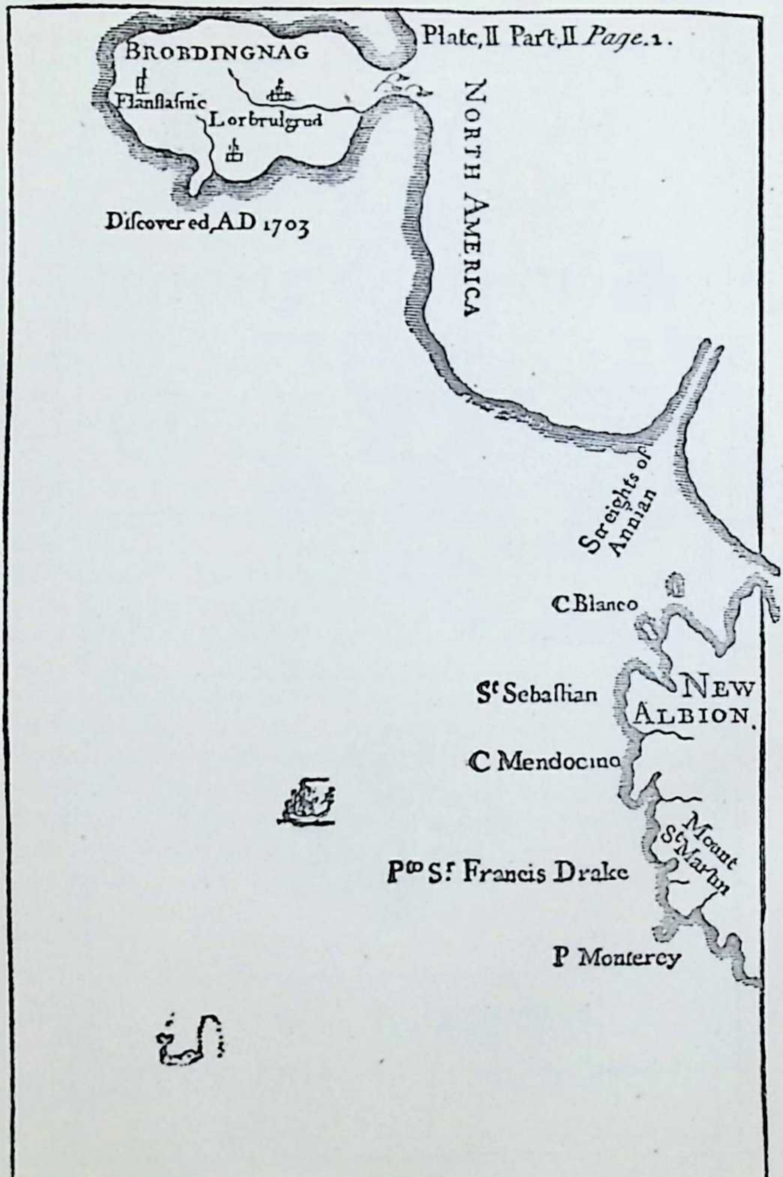
I stayed but two months with my wife and family; for my insatiable desire of seeing foreign countries would suffer me to continue no longer. I left fifteen hundred pounds with my wife, and fixed her in a good house at Redriff. My remaining stock I carried with me, part in money, and part in goods, in hopes to improve my fortunes. My eldest uncle John had left me an estate in land, near Epping, of about thirty pounds a year; and I had a long lease of the Black Bull in Fetter Lane, which yielded me as much more; so that I was not in any danger of leaving my family upon the parish. My son Johnny, named so after his uncle, was at the Grammar School, and a towardly child. My daughter Betty (who is now well married, and has children) was then at her needlework. I took leave of my wife, and boy and girl, with tears on both sides, and went on board the *Adventure*, a merchant-ship of three hundred tons, bound for Surat, Captain John Nicholas of Liverpool Commander. But my account of this voyage must be referred to the second part of my Travels.

The End of the First Part

TRAVELS
INTO SEVERAL
Remote Nations
OF THE
WORLD.

PART II.
A VOYAGE to *BROBDINGNAG*.

LONDON:
Printed in the Year MDCCXXVII.


Plate, II Part, II Page. 1.
BROBDINGNAG
Flanflasnic
Lorbrulgrud
Discovered, AD 1703
NORTH AMERICA
Streights of Annian
C Blanco
St Sebastian
NEW ALBION.
C Mendocino
Mount St Martin
Pto Sr Francis Drake
P Monterey

PART II

A VOYAGE TO BROBDINGNAG

CHAPTER I

A great storm described; the long-boat sent to fetch water; the Author goes with it to discover the country. He is left on shore, is seized by one of the natives, and carried to a farmer's house. His reception there, with several accidents that happened there. A description of the inhabitants.

Having been condemned by nature and fortune to an active and restless life, in two months after my return I again left my native country, and took shipping in the Downs on the 20th day of June, 1702, in the *Adventure*, Captain John Nicholas, a Cornish man, Commander, bound for Surat. We had a very prosperous gale till we arrived at the Cape of Good Hope, where we landed for fresh water, but discovering a leak we unshipped our goods and wintered there; for the Captain falling sick of an ague, we could not leave the Cape till the end of March. We then set sail, and had a good voyage till we passed the Straits of Madagascar; but having got northward of that island, and to about five degrees south latitude, the winds, which in those seas are observed to blow a constant equal gale between the north and west from the beginning of December to the beginning of May, on the 19th of April began to blow with much greater violence, and more westerly than usual, continuing so for twenty days together, during which time we were driven a little to the east of the Molucca Islands, and about three degrees northward of the Line, as our Captain found by an observation he took the 2nd of May, at which time the wind ceased, and it was a perfect calm, whereat I was not a little rejoiced. But he, being a man well experienced in the navigation of those seas, bid us all prepare against a

storm, which accordingly happened the day following: for a southern wind, called the southern monsoon, began to set in.

Finding it was likely to overblow, we took in our sprit-sail, and stood by to hand the fore-sail; but making foul weather, we looked the guns were all fast, and handed the mizen. The ship lay very broad off, so we thought it better spooning before the sea, than trying or hulling. We reeft the fore-sail and set him, we hauled aft the fore-sheet; the helm was hard a weather. The ship wore bravely. We belayed the fore-down haul; but the sail was split, and we hauled down the yard, and got the sail into the ship, and unbound all the things clear of it. It was a very fierce storm; the sea broke strange and dangerous. We hauled off upon the lanyard of the whipstaff, and helped the man at helm. We would not get down our top-mast, but let all stand, because she scudded before the sea very well, and we knew that the top-mast being aloft, the ship was the wholesomer, and made better way through the sea, seeing we had sea-room. When the storm was over, we set fore-sail and main-sail, and brought the ship to: then we set the mizen, main top-sail, and the fore-top-sail. Our course was east-north-east, the wind was at south-west. We got the starboard tacks aboard, we cast off our weather-braces and lifts; we set in the lee-braces, and hauled forward by the weather-bowlings, and hauled them tight, and belayed them, and hauled over the mizen tack to windward, and kept her full and by as near as she would lie.

During this storm, which was followed by a strong wind west-south-west, we were carried by my computation about five hundred leagues to the east, so that the oldest sailor on board could not tell in what part of the world we were. Our provisions held out well, our ship was staunch, and our crew all in good health; but we lay in the utmost distress for water. We thought it best to hold on the same course, rather than turn more northerly, which might have brought us to the north-west parts of Great Tartary, and into the frozen sea.

On the 16th day of June, 1703, a boy on the top-mast discovered land. On the 17th we came in full view of a great island or continent (for we knew not whether) on the south side whereof was a small neck of land jutting out into the sea,

and a creek too shallow to hold a ship of above one hundred tons. We cast anchor within a league of this creek, and our Captain sent a dozen of his men well armed in the long-boat, with vessels for water if any could be found. I desired his leave to go with them, that I might see the country, and make what discoveries I could. When we came to land we saw no river or spring, nor any sign of inhabitants. Our men therefore wandered on the shore to find out some fresh water near the sea, and I walked alone about a mile on the other side, where I observed the country all barren and rocky. I now began to be weary, and seeing nothing to entertain my curiosity, I returned gently down towards the creek ; and the sea being full in my view, I saw our men already got into the boat, and rowing for life to the ship. I was going to hollow after them, although it had been to little purpose, when I observed a huge creature walking after them in the sea, as fast as he could : he waded not much deeper than his knees, and took prodigious strides : but our men had the start of him half a league, and the sea thereabouts being full of sharp-pointed rocks, the monster was not able to overtake the boat. This I was afterwards told, for I durst not stay to see the issue of that adventure ; but ran as fast as I could the way I first went, and then climbed up a steep hill, which gave me some prospect of the country. I found it fully cultivated ; but that which first surprised me was the length of the grass, which in those grounds that seemed to be kept for hay, was about twenty foot high.

I fell into a high road, for so I took it to be, though it served to the inhabitants only as a footpath through a field of barley. Here I walked on for some time, but could see little on either side, it being now near harvest, and the corn rising at least forty foot. I was an hour walking to the end of this field, which was fenced in with a hedge of at least one hundred and twenty foot high, and the trees so lofty that I could take no computation of their altitude. There was a stile to pass from this field into the next. It had four steps, and a stone to cross over when you came to the uppermost. It was impossible for me to climb this stile, because every step was six foot high, and the upper stone above twenty. I was endeavouring to find some gap in the hedge, when I discovered one of the inhabitants in the next

field, advancing towards the stile, of the same size with him whom I saw in the sea pursuing our boat. He appeared as tall as an ordinary spire-steeple, and took about ten yards at every stride, as near as I could guess. I was struck with the utmost fear and astonishment, and ran to hide myself in the corn, from whence I saw him at the top of the stile, looking back into the next field on the right hand, and heard him call in a voice many degrees louder than a speaking-trumpet : but the noise was so high in the air, that at first I certainly thought it was thunder. Whereupon seven monsters like himself came towards him with reaping-hooks in their hands, each hook about the largeness of six scythes. These people were not so well clad as the first, whose servants or labourers they seemed to be. For upon some words he spoke, they went to reap the corn in the field where I lay. I kept from them at as great a distance as I could, but was forced to move with extreme difficulty, for the stalks of the corn are sometimes not above a foot distant, so that I could hardly squeeze my body betwixt them. However, I made a shift to go forward till I came to a part of the field where the corn had been laid by the rain and wind. Here it was impossible for me to advance a step ; for the stalks were so interwoven that I could not creep through, and the beards of the fallen ears so strong and pointed that they pierced through my clothes into my flesh At the same time I heard the reapers not above an hundred yards behind me. Being quite dispirited with toil, and wholly overcome by grief and despair, I lay down between two ridges and heartily wished I might there end my days. I bemoaned my desolate widow, and fatherless children. I lamented my own folly and wilfulness in attempting a second voyage against the advice of all my friends and relations. In this terrible agitation of mind I could not forbear thinking of Lilliput, whose inhabitants looked upon me as the greatest prodigy that ever appeared in the world ; where I was able to draw an Imperial Fleet in my hand, and perform those other actions which will be recorded for ever in the chronicles of that empire, while posterity shall hardly believe them, although attested by millions. I reflected what a mortification it must prove to me to appear as inconsiderable in this nation as one single Lilliputian would be among us. But

this I conceived was to be the least of my misfortunes : for as human creatures are observed to be more savage and cruel in proportion to their bulk, what could I expect but to be a morsel in the mouth of the first among these enormous barbarians that should happen to seize me ? Undoubtedly philosophers are in the right when they tell us, that nothing is great or little otherwise than by comparison. It might have pleased fortune to let the Lilliputians find some nation, where the people were as diminutive with respect to them, as they were to me. And who knows but that even this prodigious race of mortals might be equally overmatched in some distant part of the world, whereof we have yet no discovery ?

Scared and confounded as I was, I could not forbear going on with these reflections, when one of the reapers approaching within ten yards of the ridge where I lay, made me apprehend that with the next step I should be squashed to death under his foot, or cut in two with his reaping-hook. And therefore when he was again about to move, I screamed as loud as fear could make me. Whereupon the huge creature trod short, and looking round about under him for some time, at last espied me as I lay on the ground. He considered a while with the caution of one who endeavours to lay hold on a small dangerous animal in such a manner that it shall not be able either to scratch or to bite him, as I myself have sometimes done with a weasel in England. At length he ventured to take me up behind by the middle between his forefinger and thumb, and brought me within three yards of his eyes, that he might behold my shape more perfectly. I guessed his meaning, and my good fortune gave me so much presence of mind, that I resolved not to struggle in the least as he held me in the air about sixty foot from the ground, although he grievously pinched my sides, for fear I should slip through his fingers. All I ventured was to raise my eyes towards the sun, and place my hands together in a supplicating posture, and to speak some words in an humble melancholy tone, suitable to the condition I then was in. For I apprehended every moment that he would dash me against the ground, as we usually do any little hateful animal which we have a mind to destroy. But my good star would have it, that he appeared pleased with

my voice and gestures, and began to look upon me as a curiosity, much wondering to hear me pronounce articulate words, although he could not understand them. In the mean time I was not able to forbear groaning and shedding tears, and turning my head towards my sides ; letting him know, as well as I could, how cruelly I was hurt by the pressure of his thumb and finger. He seemed to apprehend my meaning ; for, lifting up the lappet of his coat, he put me gently into it, and immediately ran along with me to his master, who was a substantial farmer, and the same person I had first seen in the field.

The farmer having (as I supposed by their talk) received such an account of me as his servant could give him, took a piece of a small straw, about the size of a walking staff, and therewith lifted up the lappets of my coat ; which it seems he thought to be some kind of covering that nature had given me. He blew my hairs aside to take a better view of my face. He called his hinds about him, and asked them (as I afterwards learned) whether they had ever seen in the fields any little creature that resembled me. He then placed me softly on the ground upon all four, but I got immediately up, and walked slowly backwards and forwards, to let those people see I had no intent to run away. They all sat down in a circle about me, the better to observe my motions. I pulled off my hat, and made a low bow towards the farmer. I fell on my knees, and lifted up my hands and eyes, and spoke several words as loud as I could : I took a purse of gold out of my pocket, and humbly presented it to him. He received it on the palm of his hand, then applied it close to his eye, to see what it was, and afterwards turned it several times with the point of a pin (which he took out of his sleeve), but could make nothing of it. Whereupon I made a sign that he should place his hand on the ground. I took the purse, and opening it, poured all the gold into his palm. There were six Spanish pieces of four pistoles each, besides twenty or thirty smaller coins. I saw him wet the tip of his little finger upon his tongue, and take up one of my largest pieces, and then another, but he seemed to be wholly ignorant what they were. He made me a sign to put them again into my purse, and the purse again

into my pocket, which after offering to him several times, I thought it best to do.

The farmer by this time was convinced I must be a rational creature. He spoke often to me, but the sound of his voice pierced my ears like that of a water-mill, yet his words were articulate enough. I answered as loud as I could, in several languages, and he often laid his ear within two yards of me, but all in vain, for we were wholly unintelligible to each other. He then sent his servants to their work, and taking his handkerchief out of his pocket, he doubled and spread it on his left hand, which he placed flat on the ground, with the palm upwards, making me a sign to step into it, as I could easily do, for it was not above a foot in thickness. I thought it my part to obey, and for fear of falling, laid myself at length upon the handkerchief, with the remainder of which he lapped me up to the head for further security, and in this manner carried me home to his house. There he called his wife, and showed me to her ; but she screamed and ran back, as women in England do at the sight of a toad or a spider. However, when she had a while seen my behaviour, and how well I observed the signs her husband made, she was soon reconciled and by degrees grew extremely tender of me.

It was about twelve at noon, and a servant brought in dinner. It was only one substantial dish of meat (fit for the plain condition of an husbandman) in a dish of about four-and-twenty foot diameter. The company were the farmer and his wife, three children, and an old grandmother. When they were sat down, the farmer placed me at some distance from him on the table, which was thirty foot high from the floor. I was in a terrible fright, and kept as far as I could from the edge for fear of falling. The wife minced a bit of meat, then crumbled some bread on a trencher, and placed it before me. I made her a low bow, took out my knife and fork, and fell to eat, which gave them exceeding delight. The mistress sent her maid for a small dram cup, which held about three gallons, and filled it with drink ; I took up the vessel with much difficulty in both hands, and in a most respectful manner drank to her ladyship's health, expressing the words as loud as I could in English, which made the company laugh so heartily, that

I was almost deafened with the noise. This liquor tasted like a small cyder, and was not unpleasant. Then the master made me a sign to come to his trencher side ; but as I walked on the table, being in great surprise all the time, as the indulgent reader will easily conceive and excuse, I happened to stumble against a crust, and fell flat on my face, but received no hurt. I got up immediately, and observing the good people to be in much concern, I took my hat (which I held under my arm out of good manners) and waving it over my head, made three huzzas, to show I had got no mischief by my fall. But advancing forwards towards my master (as I shall henceforth call him) his youngest son who sat next him, an arch boy of about ten years old, took me up by the legs, and held me so high in the air, that I trembled every limb ; but his father snatched me from him, and at the same time gave him such a box on the left ear, as would have felled an European troop of horse to the earth, ordering him to be taken from the table. But being afraid the boy might owe me a spite, and well remembering how mischievous all children among us naturally are to sparrows, rabbits, young kittens, and puppy dogs, I fell on my knees, and pointing to the boy, made my master to understand, as well as I could, that I desired his son might be pardoned. The father complied, and the lad took his seat again ; whereupon I went to him and kissed his hand, which my master took, and made him stroke me gently with it.

In the midst of dinner, my mistress's favourite cat leapt into her lap. I heard a noise behind me like that of a dozen stocking-weavers at work ; and turning my head, I found it proceeded from the purring of this animal, who seemed to be three times larger than an ox, as I computed by the view of her head, and one of her paws, while her mistress was feeding and stroking her. The fierceness of this creature's countenance altogether discomposed me ; though I stood at the farther end of the table, above fifty foot off ; and although my mistress held her fast for fear she might give a spring, and seize me in her talons. But it happened there was no danger ; for the cat took not the least notice of me when my master placed me within three yards of her. And as I have been always told, and found true by experience in my travels, that flying, or

discovering fear before a fierce animal, is a certain way to make it pursue or attack you, so I resolved in this dangerous juncture to show no manner of concern. I walked with intrepidity five or six times before the very head of the cat, and came within half a yard of her ; whereupon she drew herself back as if she were more afraid of me : I had less apprehension concerning the dogs, whereof three or four came into the room as it is usual in farmers' houses ; one of which was a mastiff, equal in bulk to four elephants, and a greyhound, somewhat taller than the mastiff, but not so large.

When dinner was almost done, the nurse came in with a child of a year old in her arms, who immediately spied me, and began a squall that you might have heard from London Bridge to Chelsea, after the usual oratory of infants, to get me for a plaything. The mother out of pure indulgence took me up, and put me towards the child, who presently seized me by the middle, and got my head in his mouth, where I roared so loud that the urchin was frighted, and let me drop ; and I should infallibly have broke my neck if the mother had not held her apron under me. The spots, pimples and freckles in this woman's skin made me reflect upon the fair skins of our English ladies, who appear so beautiful to us, only because they are of our own size, and their defects not to be seen but through a magnifying glass, where we find by experiment that the smoothest and whitest skins look rough and coarse, and ill coloured.

I remember when I was at Lilliput, the complexion of those diminutive people appeared to me the fairest in the world ; and talking upon this subject with a person of learning there, who was an intimate friend of mine, he said that my face appeared much fairer and smoother when he looked on me from the ground, than it did upon a nearer view when I took him up in my hand and brought him close, which he confessed was at first a very shocking sight. He said he could discover great holes in my skin ; that the stumps of my beard were ten times stronger than the bristles of a boar, and my complexion made up of several colours altogether disagreeable : although I must beg leave to say for myself, that I am as fair as most of my sex and country, and very little sunburnt by all my travels. On

the other side, discoursing of the ladies in that Emperor's court, he used to tell me, one had freckles, another too wide a mouth, a third too large a nose, nothing of which I was able to distinguish. I confess this reflection was obvious enough; which, however, I could not forbear lest the reader might think those vast creatures were actually deformed; for I must do them justice to say they are a comely race of people; and particularly the features of my master's countenance, although he were but a farmer, when I beheld him from the height of sixty foot, appeared very well proportioned.

When dinner was done, my master went out to his labourers, and as I could discover by his voice and gesture, gave his wife a strict charge to take care of me. I was very much tired, and disposed to sleep, which my mistress perceiving, she put me on her own bed, and covered me with a clean white handkerchief, but larger and coarser than the mainsail of a man of war.

I slept about two hours, and dreamed I was at home with my wife and children, which aggravated my sorrows when I awaked and found myself alone in a vast room, between two and three hundred foot wide, and above two hundred high, lying in a bed twenty yards wide. My mistress was gone about her household affairs, and had locked me in. The bed was eight yards from the floor. While I was under these circumstances, two rats crept up the curtains, and ran smelling backwards and forwards on the bed. One of them came up almost to my face, whereupon I rose in a fright, and drew out my hanger to defend myself. These horrible animals had the boldness to attack me on both sides, and one of them held his fore-feet at my collar; but I had the good fortune to rip up his belly before he could do me any mischief. He fell down at my feet, and the other seeing the fate of his comrade, made his escape, but not without one good wound on the back, which I gave him as he fled, and made the blood run trickling from him. After this exploit, I walked gently to and fro on the bed, to recover my breath and loss of spirits. These creatures were of the size of a large mastiff, but infinitely more nimble and fierce, so that if I had taken off my belt before I went to sleep, I must have infallibly been torn to pieces and devoured. I measured the tail of the dead rat, and found it

to be two yards long, wanting an inch ; but it went against my stomach to drag the carcass off the bed, where it lay still bleeding ; I observed it had yet some life, but with a strong slash cross the neck, I thoroughly dispatched it.

Soon after my mistress came into the room, who seeing me all bloody, ran and took me up in her hand. I pointed to the dead rat, smiling and making other signs to show I was not hurt, whereat she was extremely rejoiced, calling the maid to take up the dead rat with a pair of tongs, and throw it out of the window. Then she set me on a table, where I showed her my hanger all bloody, and wiping it on the lappet of my coat, returned it to the scabbard.

I hope the gentle reader will excuse me for dwelling on these and the like particulars, which however insignificant they may appear to grovelling vulgar minds, yet will certainly help a philosopher to enlarge his thoughts and imagination, and apply them to the benefit of public as well as private life, which was my sole design in presenting this and other accounts of my travels to the world ; wherein I have been chiefly studious of truth, without affecting any ornaments of learning or of style. But the whole scene of this voyage made so strong an impression on my mind, and is so deeply fixed in my memory, that in committing it to paper I did not omit one material circumstance : however, upon a strict review, I blotted out several passages of less moment which were in my first copy, for fear of being censured as tedious and trifling, whereof travellers are often, perhaps not without justice, accused.

CHAPTER II

A description of the farmer's daughter. The Author carried to a market-town, and then to the metropolis. The particulars of his journey.

My mistress had a daughter of nine years old, a child of forward parts for her age, very dexterous at her needle, and skilful in dressing her baby. Her mother and she contrived to fit up the baby's cradle for me against night: the cradle was put into a small drawer of a cabinet, and the drawer placed upon a hanging shelf for fear of the rats. This was my bed all the time I stayed with those people, though made more convenient by degrees, as I began to learn their language, and make my wants known. This young girl was so handy, that after I had once or twice pulled off my clothes before her, she was able to dress and undress me, though I never gave her that trouble when she would let me do either myself. She made me seven shirts, and some other linen, of as fine cloth as could be got, which indeed was coarser than sackcloth; and these she constantly washed for me with her own hands. She was likewise my school-mistress to teach me the language: when I pointed to anything, she told me the name of it in her own tongue, so that in a few days I was able to call for whatever I had a mind to. She was very good-natured, and not above forty foot high, being little for her age. She gave me the name of *Grildrig*, which the family took up, and afterwards the whole kingdom. The word imports what the Latins call *nanunculus*, the Italians *homunceletino*, and the English *mannikin*. To her I chiefly owe my preservation in that country: we never parted while I was there; I called her my *Glumdalclitch*, or little nurse: and I should be guilty of great ingratitude if I omitted this honourable mention of her care and affection towards me, which I heartily wish it lay in my power to requite as she deserves, instead of being the innocent but unhappy instrument of her disgrace, as I have too much reason to fear.

It now began to be known and talked of in the neighbourhood, that my master had found a strange animal in the field, about the bigness of a *splacknuck*, but exactly shaped in every part like a human creature; which it likewise imitated in all its actions; seemed to speak in a little language of its own, had already learned several words of theirs, went erect upon two legs, was tame and gentle, would come when it was called, do whatever it was bid, had the finest limbs in the world, and a complexion fairer than a nobleman's daughter of three years old. Another farmer who lived hard by, and was a particular friend of my master, came on a visit on purpose to enquire into the truth of this story. I was immediately produced, and placed upon a table, where I walked as I was commanded, drew my hanger, put it up again, made my reverence to my master's guest, asked him in his own language how he did, and told him he was welcome, just as my little nurse had instructed me. This man, who was old and dim-sighted, put on his spectacles to behold me better, at which I could not forbear laughing very heartily, for his eyes appeared like the full moon shining into a chamber at two windows. Our people, who discovered the cause of my mirth, bore me company in laughing, at which the old fellow was fool enough to be angry and out of countenance. He had the character of a great miser, and to my misfortune he well deserved it, by the cursed advice he gave my master to show me as a sight upon a market-day in the next town, which was half an hour's riding, about two and twenty miles from our house. I guessed there was some mischief contriving, when I observed my master and his friend whispering long together, sometimes pointing at me; and my fears made me fancy that I overheard and understood some of their words. But the next morning Glumdalclitch my little nurse told me the whole matter, which she had cunningly picked out from her mother. The poor girl laid me on her bosom, and fell a weeping with shame and grief. She apprehended some mischief would happen to me from rude vulgar folks, who might squeeze me to death, or break one of my limbs by taking me in their hands. She had also observed how modest I was in my nature, how nicely I regarded my honour, and what an indignity I should conceive it to be exposed for

money as a public spectacle to the meanest of the people. She said, her papa and mamma had promised that Grildrig should be hers, but now she found they meant to serve her as they did last year, when they pretended to give her a lamb, and yet, as soon as it was fat, sold it to a butcher. For my own part, I may truly affirm that I was less concerned than my nurse. I had a strong hope which never left me, that I should one day recover my liberty; and as to the ignominy of being carried about for a monster, I considered myself to be a perfect stranger in the country, and that such a misfortune could never be charged upon me as a reproach, if ever I should return to England; since the King of Great Britain himself, in my condition, must have undergone the same distress.

My master, pursuant to the advice of his friend, carried me in a box the next market-day to the neighbouring town, and took along with him his little daughter my nurse upon a pillion behind him. The box was close on every side, with a little door for me to go in and out, and a few gimlet-holes to let in air. The girl had been so careful to put the quilt of her baby's bed into it, for me to lie down on. However, I was terribly shaken and discomposed in this journey, though it were but of half an hour. For the horse went about forty foot at every step, and trotted so high, that the agitation was equal to the rising and falling of a ship in a great storm, but much more frequent. Our journey was somewhat further than from London to St. Albans. My master alighted at an inn which he used to frequent; and after consulting a while with the inn-keeper, and making some necessary preparations, he hired the *Grultrud*, or crier, to give notice through the town of a strange creature to be seen at the Sign of the Green Eagle, not so big as a *splacknuck* (an animal in that country very finely shaped, about six foot long) and in every part of the body resembling an human creature, could speak several words, and perform an hundred diverting tricks.

I was placed upon a table in the largest room of the inn, which might be near three hundred foot square. My little nurse stood on a low stool close to the table, to take care of me, and direct what I should do. My master, to avoid a crowd,

would suffer only thirty people at a time to see me. I walked about on the table as the girl commanded: she asked me questions as far as she knew my understanding of the language reached, and I answered them as loud as I could. I turned about several times to the company, paid my humble respects, said they were welcome, and used some other speeches I had been taught. I took up a thimble filled with liquor, which Glumdalclitch had given me for a cup, and drank their health. I drew out my hanger, and flourished with it after the manner of fencers in England. My nurse gave me part of a straw, which I exercised as a pike, having learned the art in my youth. I was that day shown to twelve sets of company, and as often forced to go over again with the same fopperies, till I was half dead with weariness and vexation. For those who had seen me made such wonderful reports, that the people were ready to break down the doors to come in. My master for his own interest would not suffer any one to touch me except my nurse; and, to prevent danger, benches were set round the table at such a distance as put me out of every body's reach. However, an unlucky school-boy aimed a hazel nut directly at my head, which very narrowly missed me; otherwise, it came with so much violence, that it would have infallibly knocked out my brains, for it was almost as large as a small pumpion: but I had the satisfaction to see the young rogue well beaten, and turned out of the room.

My master gave public notice that he would show me again the next market-day, and in the meantime he prepared a more convenient vehicle for me, which he had reason enough to do; for I was so tired with my first journey, and with entertaining company for eight hours together, that I could hardly stand upon my legs or speak a word. It was at least three days before I recovered my strength; and that I might have no rest at home, all the neighbouring gentlemen from an hundred miles round, hearing of my fame, came to see me at my master's own house. There could not be fewer than thirty persons with their wives and children (for the country is very populous); and my master demanded the rate of a full room whenever he showed me at home, although it were only to a single family; so that for some time I had but little ease every day of the week (except

Wednesday, which is their Sabbath) although I were not carried to the town.

My master, finding how profitable I was likely to be, resolved to carry me to the most considerable cities of the kingdom. Having therefore provided himself with all things necessary for a long journey, and settled his affairs at home, he took leave of his wife, and upon the 17th of August, 1703, about two months after my arrival, we set out for the metropolis, situated near the middle of that empire, and about three thousand miles distance from our house. My master made his daughter Glumdalclitch ride behind him. She carried me on her lap in a box tied about her waist. The girl had lined it on all sides with the softest cloth she could get, well quilted underneath, furnished it with her baby's bed, provided me with linen and other necessaries, and made everything as convenient as she could. We had no other company but a boy of the house, who rode after us with the luggage.

My master's design was to show me in all the towns by the way, and to step out of the road for fifty or an hundred miles, to any village or person of quality's house where he might expect custom. We made easy journeys of not above seven or eight score miles a day: for Glumdalclitch, on purpose to spare me, complained she was tired with the trotting of the horse. She often took me out of my box at my own desire, to give me air and show me the country, but always held me fast by a leading-string. We passed over five or six rivers many degrees broader and deeper than the Nile or the Ganges; and there was hardly a rivulet so small as the Thames at London Bridge. We were ten weeks in our journey, and I was shown in eighteen large towns besides many villages and private families.

On the 26th day of October, we arrived at the metropolis, called in their language *Lorbrulgrud*, or Pride of the Universe. My master took a lodging in the principal street of the city, not far from the royal palace, and put out bills in the usual form, containing an exact description of my person and parts. He hired a large room between three and four hundred foot wide. He provided a table sixty foot in diameter, upon which I was to act my part, and palisadoed it round three foot from

the edge, and as many high, to prevent my falling over. I was shown ten times a day to the wonder and satisfaction of all people. I could now speak the language tolerably well, and perfectly understood every word that was spoken to me. Besides, I had learnt their alphabet, and could make a shift to explain a sentence here and there; for Glumdalclitch had been my instructor while we were at home, and at leisure hours during our journey. She carried a little book in her pocket, not much larger than a Sanson's Atlas; it was a common treatise for the use of young girls, giving a short account of their religion: out of this she taught me my letters, and interpreted the words.

CHAPTER III

The Author sent for to Court. The Queen buys him of his master the farmer, and presents him to the King. He disputes with his Majesty's great scholars. An apartment at Court provided for the Author. He is in high favour with the Queen. He stands up for the honour of his own country. His quarrels with the Queen's dwarf.

THE frequent labours I underwent every day made in a few weeks a very considerable change in my health: the more my master got by me, the more unsatiable he grew. I had quite lost my stomach, and was almost reduced to a skeleton. The farmer observed it, and concluding I soon must die, resolved to make as good a hand of me as he could. While he was thus reasoning and resolving with himself, a *Slardral*, or Gentleman Usher, came from court, commanding my master to carry me immediately thither for the diversion of the Queen and her ladies. Some of the latter had already been to see me, and reported strange things of my beauty, behaviour, and good sense. Her Majesty and those who attended her were beyond measure delighted with my demeanour. I fell on my knees, and begged the honour of kissing her Imperial foot; but this gracious princess held out her little finger towards me (after I was set on a table) which I embraced in both my arms and put the tip of it with the utmost respect to my lip. She made me some general questions about my country and my travels, which I answered as distinctly and in as few words as I could. She asked whether I would be content to live at court. I bowed down to the board of the table, and humbly answered, that I was my master's slave, but if I were at my own disposal, I should be proud to devote my life to her Majesty's service. She then asked my master whether he were willing to sell me at a good price. He, who apprehended I could not live a month, was ready enough to part with me, and demanded a thousand pieces of gold, which were ordered him on the spot, each piece being about the bigness of eight

hundred moidores; but, allowing for the proportion of all things between that country and Europe, and the high price of gold among them, was hardly so great a sum as a thousand guineas would be in England. I then said to the Queen, since I was now her Majesty's most humble creature and vassal, I must beg the favour, that Glumdalclitch, who had always tended me with so much care and kindness, and understood to do it so well, might be admitted into her service, and continue to be my nurse and instructor. Her Majesty agreed to my petition, and easily got the farmer's consent, who was glad enough to have his daughter preferred at court: and the poor girl herself was not able to hide her joy. My late master withdrew, bidding me farewell, and saying he had left me in a good service; to which I replied not a word, only making him a slight bow.

The Queen observed my coldness, and when the farmer was gone out of the apartment, asked me the reason. I made bold to tell her Majesty that I owed no other obligation to my late master, than his not dashing out the brains of a poor harmless creature found by chance in his field; which obligation was amply recompensed by the gain he had made in showing me through half the kingdom, and the price he had now sold me for. That the life I had since led was laborious enough to kill an animal of ten times my strength. That my health was much impaired by the continual drudgery of entertaining the rabble every hour of the day, and that if my master had not thought my life in danger, her Majesty perhaps would not have got so cheap a bargain. But as I was out of all fear of being ill treated under the protection of so great and good an Empress, the Ornament of Nature, the Darling of the World, the Delight of her Subjects, the Phœnix of the Creation; so I hoped my late master's apprehensions would appear to be groundless, for I already found my spirits to revive by the influence of her most august presence.

This was the sum of my speech, delivered with great improprieties and hesitation; the latter part was altogether framed in the style peculiar to that people, whereof I learned some phrases from Glumdalclitch, while she was carrying me to court.

The Queen giving great allowance for my defectiveness in speaking, was however surprised at so much wit and good sense in so diminutive an animal. She took me in her own hand, and carried me to the King, who was then retired to his cabinet. His Majesty, a prince of much gravity, and austere countenance, not well observing my shape at first view, asked the Queen after a cold manner, how long it was since she grew fond of a *splacknuck*; for such it seems he took me to be, as I lay upon my breast in her Majesty's right hand. But this princess, who hath an infinite deal of wit and humour, set me gently on my feet upon the scrutore, and commanded me to give his Majesty an account of myself, which I did in a very few words; and Glumdalclitch, who attended at the cabinet door, and could not endure I should be out of her sight, being admitted, confirmed all that had passed from my arrival at her father's house.

The King, although he be as learned a person as any in his dominions, and had been educated in the study of philosophy, and particularly mathematics; yet when he observed my shape exactly, and saw me walk erect, before I began to speak, conceived I might be a piece of clock-work, (which is in that country arrived to a very great perfection) contrived by some ingenious artist. But when he heard my voice, and found what I delivered to be regular and rational, he could not conceal his astonishment. He was by no means satisfied with the relation I gave him of the manner I came into his kingdom, but thought it a story concerted between Glumdalclitch and her father, who had taught me a set of words to make me sell at a higher price. Upon this imagination he put several other questions to me, and still received rational answers, no otherwise defective than by a foreign accent, and an imperfect knowledge in the language, with some rustic phrases which I had learned at the farmer's house, and did not suit the polite style of a court.

His Majesty sent for three great scholars who were then in their weekly waiting, according to the custom in that country. These gentlemen, after they had a while examined my shape with much nicety, were of different opinions concerning me. They all agreed that I could not be produced according to the

regular laws of nature, because I was not framed with a capacity of preserving my life, either by swiftness, or climbing of trees, or digging holes in the earth. They observed by my teeth, which they viewed with great exactness, that I was a carnivorous animal; yet most quadrupeds being an overmatch for me, and field mice, with some others, too nimble, they could not imagine how I should be able to support myself, unless I fed upon snails and other insects, which they offered, by many learned arguments, to evince that I could not possibly do. One of these virtuosi seemed to think that I might be an embryo, or abortive birth. But this opinion was rejected by the other two, who observed my limbs to be perfect and finished, and that I had lived several years, as it was manifested from my beard, the stumps whereof they plainly discovered through a magnifying glass. They would not allow me to be a dwarf, because my littleness was beyond all degrees of comparison; for the Queen's favourite dwarf, the smallest ever known in that kingdom, was near thirty foot high. After much debate, they concluded unanimously that I was only *relplum scalcath*, which is interpreted literally, *lusus naturæ*; a determination exactly agreeable to the modern philosophy of Europe, whose professors, disdaining the old evasion of *occult causes*, whereby the followers of Aristotle endeavour in vain to disguise their ignorance, have invented this wonderful solution of all difficulties, to the unspeakable advancement of human knowledge.

After this decisive conclusion, I entreated to be heard a word or two. I applied myself to the King, and assured his Majesty, that I came from a country which abounded with several millions of both sexes, and of my own stature; where the animals, trees, and houses were all in proportion, and where by consequence I might be as able to defend myself, and to find sustenance, as any of his Majesty's subjects could do here; which I took for a full answer to those gentlemen's arguments. To this they only replied with a smile of contempt, saying that the farmer had instructed me very well in my lesson. The King, who had a much better understanding, dismissing his learned men, sent for the farmer, who by good fortune was not yet gone out of town. Having therefore first examined

him privately, and then confronted him with me and the young girl, his Majesty began to think that what we told him might possibly be true. He desired the Queen to order that a particular care should be taken of me, and was of opinion that Glumdalclitch should still continue in her office of tending me, because he observed we had a great affection for each other. A convenient apartment was provided for her at court; she had a sort of governess appointed to take care of her education, a maid to dress her, and two other servants for menial offices; but the care of me was wholly appropriated to herself. The Queen commanded her own cabinet-maker to contrive a box that might serve me for a bed-chamber, after the model that Glumdalclitch and I should agree upon. This man was a most ingenious artist, and according to my directions, in three weeks finished for me a wooden chamber of sixteen foot square, and twelve high, with sash-windows, a door, and two closets, like a London bed-chamber. The board that made the ceiling was to be lifted up and down by two hinges, to put in a bed ready furnished by her Majesty's upholsterer, which Glumdalclitch took out every day to air, made it with her own hands, and letting it down at night, locked up the roof over me. A nice workman, who was famous for little curiosities, undertook to make me two chairs, with backs and frames, of a substance not unlike ivory, and two tables, with a cabinet to put my things in. The room was quilted on all sides, as well as the floor and the ceiling, to prevent any accident from the carelessness of those who carried me, and to break the force of a jolt when I went in a coach. I desired a lock for my door, to prevent rats and mice from coming in: the smith, after several attempts, made the smallest that ever was seen among them, for I have known a larger at the gate of a gentleman's house in England. I made a shift to keep the key in a pocket of my own, fearing Glumdalclitch might lose it. The Queen likewise ordered the thinnest silks that could be gotten, to make me clothes, not much thicker than an English blanket, very cumbersome till I was accustomed to them. They were after the fashion of the kingdom, partly resembling the Persian, and partly the Chinese, and are a very grave and decent habit.

The Queen became so fond of my company, that she could

not dine without me. I had a table placed upon the same at which her Majesty ate, just at her left elbow, and a chair to sit on. Glumdalclitch stood upon a stool on the floor, near my table, to assist and take care of me. I had an entire set of silver dishes and plates, and other necessaries, which, in proportion to those of the Queen, were not much bigger than what I have seen of the same kind in a London toy-shop for the furniture of a baby-house : these my little nurse kept in her pocket in a silver box, and gave me at meals as I wanted them, always cleaning them herself. No person dined with the Queen but the two Princesses Royal, the elder sixteen years old, and the younger at that time thirteen and a month. Her Majesty used to put a bit of meat upon one of my dishes, out of which I carved for myself, and her diversion was to see me eat in miniature. For the Queen (who had indeed but a weak stomach) took up at one mouthful as much as a dozen English farmers could eat at a meal, which to me was for some time a very nauseous sight. She would craunch the wing of a lark, bones and all, between her teeth, although it were nine times as large as that of a full-grown turkey ; and put a bit of bread into her mouth, as big as two twelve-penny loaves. She drank out of a golden cup, above a hogshead at a draught. Her knives were twice as long as a scythe set straight upon the handle. The spoons, forks, and other instruments were all in the same proportion. I remember when Glumdalclitch carried me out of curiosity to see some of the tables at court, where ten or a dozen of these enormous knives and forks were lifted up together, I thought I had never till then beheld so terrible a sight.

It is the custom that every Wednesday (which, as I have before observed, was their Sabbath) the King and Queen, with the royal issue of both sexes, dine together in the apartment of his Majesty, to whom I was now become a great favourite ; and at these times my little chair and table were placed at his left hand, before one of the salt-cellars. This prince took a pleasure in conversing with me, enquiring into the manners, religion, laws, government, and learning of Europe ; wherein I gave him the best account I was able. His apprehension was so clear, and his judgment so exact, that he made very wise

reflections and observations upon all I said. But, I confess, that after I had been a little too copious in talking of my own beloved country, of our trade, and wars by sea and land, of our schisms in religion, and parties in the state, the prejudices of his education prevailed so far, that he could not forbear taking me up in his right hand, and stroking me gently with the other, after an hearty fit of laughing, asked me whether I were a Whig or a Tory. Then turning to his first minister, who waited behind him with a white staff, near as tall as the mainmast of the *Royal Sovereign*, he observed how contemptible a thing was human grandeur, which could be mimicked by such diminutive insects as I: and yet, said he, I dare engage, these creatures have their titles and distinctions of honour, they contrive little nests and burrows, that they call houses and cities; they make a figure in dress and equipage; they love, they fight, they dispute, they cheat, they betray. And thus he continued on, while my colour came and went several times with indignation to hear our noble country, the mistress of arts and arms, the scourge of France, the arbitress of Europe, the seat of virtue, piety, honour and truth, the pride and envy of the world, so contemptuously treated.

But as I was not in a condition to resent injuries, so, upon mature thoughts, I began to doubt whether I were injured or no. For, after having been accustomed several months to the sight and converse of this people, and observed every object upon which I cast my eyes to be of proportionable magnitude, the horror I had first conceived from their bulk and aspect was so far worn off, that if I had then beheld a company of English lords and ladies in their finery and birth-day clothes, acting their several parts in the most courtly manner, of strutting, and bowing, and prating, to say the truth, I should have been strongly tempted to laugh as much at them as the King and his grandees did at me. Neither indeed could I forbear smiling at myself, when the Queen used to place me upon her hand towards a looking-glass, by which both our persons appeared before me in full view together; and there could be nothing more ridiculous than the comparison; so that I really began to imagine myself dwindled many degrees below my usual size.

Nothing angered and mortified me so much as the Queen's

dwarf, who being of the lowest stature that was ever in that country (for I verily think he was not full thirty foot high) became insolent at seeing a creature so much beneath him, that he would always affect to swagger and look big as he passed by me in the Queen's antechamber, while I was standing on some table talking with the lords or ladies of the court, and he seldom failed of a smart word or two upon my littleness; against which I could only revenge myself by calling him brother, challenging him to wrestle, and such repartees as are usual in the mouths of court pages. One day at dinner this malicious little cub was so nettled with something I had said to him, that raising himself upon the frame of her Majesty's chair, he took me up by the middle, as I was sitting down, not thinking any harm, and let me drop into a large silver bowl of cream, and then ran away as fast as he could. I fell over head and ears, and if I had not been a good swimmer, it might have gone very hard with me; for Glumdalclitch in that instant happened to be at the other end of the room, and the Queen was in such a fright that she wanted presence of mind to assist me. But my little nurse ran to my relief, and took me out, after I had swallowed above a quart of cream. I was put to bed; however I received no other damage than the loss of a suit of clothes, which was utterly spoiled. The dwarf was soundly whipped, and as a farther punishment, forced to drink up the bowl of cream, into which he had thrown me; neither was he ever restored to favour: for soon after the Queen bestowed him to a lady of high quality, so that I saw him no more, to my very great satisfaction; for I could not tell to what extremity such a malicious urchin might have carried his resentment.

He had before served me a scurvy trick, which set the Queen a laughing, although at the same time she were heartily vexed, and would have immediately cashiered him, if I had not been so generous as to intercede. Her Majesty had taken a marrow-bone upon her plate, and after knocking out the marrow, placed the bone again in the dish erect as it stood before; the dwarf watching his opportunity, while Glumdalclitch was gone to the sideboard, mounted upon the stool she stood on to take care of me at meals, took me up in both hands, and squeezing my legs together, wedged them into the marrow-

bone above my waist, where I stuck for some time, and made a very ridiculous figure. I believe it was near a minute before any one knew what was become of me, for I thought it below me to cry out. But, as princes seldom get their meat hot, my legs were not scalded, only my stockings and breeches in a sad condition. The dwarf at my entreaty had no other punishment than a sound whipping.

I was frequently rallied by the Queen upon account of my fearfulness, and she used to ask me whether the people of my country were as great cowards as myself. The occasion was this. The kingdom is much pestered with flies in summer; and these odious insects, each of them as big as a Dunstable lark, hardly gave me any rest while I sat at dinner, with their continual humming and buzzing about my ears. They would sometimes alight upon my victuals; and leave their loathsome excrement or spawn behind, which to me was very visible, though not to the natives of that country, whose large optics were not so acute as mine in viewing smaller objects. Sometimes they would fix upon my nose or forehead, where they stung me to the quick, smelling very offensively, and I could easily trace that viscous matter, which our naturalists tell us enables those creatures to walk with their feet upwards upon a ceiling. I had much ado to defend myself against these detestable animals, and could not forbear starting when they came on my face. It was the common practice of the dwarf to catch a number of these insects in his hand, as schoolboys do among us, and let them out suddenly under my nose, on purpose to frighten me, and divert the Queen. My remedy was to cut them in pieces with my knife as they flew in the air, wherein my dexterity was much admired.

I remember one morning when Glumdalclitch had set me in my box upon a window, as she usually did in fair days to give me air (for I durst not venture to let the box be hung on a nail out of the window, as we do with cages in England) after I had lifted up one of my sashes, and sat down at my table to eat a piece of sweet cake for my breakfast, above twenty wasps, allured by the smell, came flying into the room, humming louder than the drones of as many bagpipes. Some of them seized my cake, and carried it piecemeal away, others flew

about my head and face, confounding me with the noise, and putting me in the utmost terror of their stings. However I had the courage to rise and draw my hanger, and attack them in the air. I dispatched four of them, but the rest got away and I presently shut my window. These insects were as large as partridges : I took out their stings, found them an inch and a half long, and as sharp as needles. I carefully preserved them all, and having since shown them with some other curiosities in several parts of Europe, upon my return to England I gave three of them to Gresham College, and kept the fourth for myself.

CHAPTER IV

The country described. A proposal for correcting modern maps. The King's palace, and some account of the metropolis. The Author's way of travelling. The chief temple described.

I NOW intend to give the reader a short description of this country, as far as I travelled in it, which was not above two thousand miles round Lorbrulgrud the metropolis. For the Queen, whom I always attended, never went further when she accompanied the King in his progresses, and there stayed till his Majesty returned from viewing his frontiers. The whole extent of this prince's dominions reacheth about six thousand miles in length, and from three to five in breadth. From whence I cannot but conclude that our geographers of Europe are in a great error, by supposing nothing but sea between Japan and California; for it was ever my opinion, that there must be a balance of earth to counterpoise the great continent of Tartary; and therefore they ought to correct their maps and charts, by joining this vast tract of land to the north-west parts of America, wherein I shall be ready to lend them my assistance.

The kingdom is a peninsula, terminated to the north-east by a ridge of mountains thirty miles high, which are altogether impassable by reason of the volcanoes upon the tops. Neither do the most learned know what sort of mortals inhabit beyond those mountains, or whether they be inhabited at all. On the three other sides it is bounded by the ocean. There is not one sea-port in the whole kingdom, and those parts of the coasts into which the rivers issue are so full of pointed rocks, and the sea generally so rough, that there is no venturing with the smallest of their boats, so that these people are wholly excluded from any commerce with the rest of the world. But the large rivers are full of vessels, and abound with excellent fish, for they seldom get any from the sea, because the sea-fish

are of the same size with those in Europe, and consequently not worth catching; whereby it is manifest, that nature, in the production of plants and animals of so extraordinary a bulk, is wholly confined to this continent, of which I leave the reasons to be determined by philosophers. However, now and then they take a whale that happens to be dashed against the rocks, which the common people feed on heartily. These whales I have known so large that a man could hardly carry one upon his shoulders; and sometimes for curiosity they are brought in hampers to Lorbrulgrud: I saw one of them in a dish at the King's table, which passed for a rarity, but I did not observe he was fond of it; for I think indeed the bigness disgusted him, although I have seen one somewhat larger in Greenland.

The country is well inhabited, for it contains fifty-one cities, near an hundred walled towns, and a great number of villages. To satisfy my curious reader, it may be sufficient to describe Lorbrulgrud. This city stands upon almost two equal parts on each side the river that passes through. It contains above eighty thousand houses, and about six hundred thousand inhabitants. It is in length three *glonglungs* (which make about fifty-four English miles) and two and a half in breadth, as I measured it myself in the royal map made by the King's order, which was laid on the ground on purpose for me, and extended an hundred feet: I paced the diameter and circumference several times bare-foot, and computing by the scale, measured it pretty exactly.

The King's palace is no regular edifice, but an heap of buildings about seven miles round: the chief rooms are generally two hundred and forty foot high, and broad and long in proportion. A coach was allowed to Glumdalclitch and me, wherein her governess frequently took her out to see the town or go among the shops; and I was always of the party, carried in my box; although the girl at my own desire would often take me out, and hold me in her hand, that I might more conveniently view the houses and the people, as we passed along the streets. I reckoned our coach to be about a square of Westminster Hall, but not altogether so high; however, I cannot be very exact. One day the governess ordered our

coachman to stop at several shops, where the beggars, watching their opportunity, crowded to the sides of the coach, and gave me the most horrible spectacles that ever an English eye beheld. There was a fellow with a wen in his neck, larger than five woolpacks, and another with a couple of wooden legs, each about twenty foot high. But the most hateful sight of all was the lice crawling on their clothes. I could see distinctly the limbs of these vermin with my naked eye, much better than those of an European louse through a microscope, and their snouts with which they rooted like swine. They were the first I had ever beheld, and I should have been curious enough to dissect one of them, if I had proper instruments (which I unluckily left behind me in the ship) although indeed the sight was so nauseous, that it perfectly turned my stomach.

Besides the large box in which I was usually carried, the Queen ordered a smaller one to be made for me, of about twelve foot square, and ten high, for the convenience of travelling, because the other was somewhat too large for Glumdalclitch's lap, and cumbersome in the coach; it was made by the same artist, whom I directed in the whole contrivance. This travelling closet was an exact square with a window in the middle of three of the squares, and each window was latticed with iron wire on the outside, to prevent accidents in long journeys. On the fourth side, which had no window, two strong staples were fixed, through which the person that carried me, when I had a mind to be on horseback, put in a leathern belt, and buckled it about his waist. This was always the office of some grave trusty servant in whom I could confide, whether I attended the King and Queen in their progresses, or were disposed to see the gardens, or pay a visit to some great lady or minister of state in the court, when Glumdalclitch happened to be out of order: for I soon began to be known and esteemed among the greatest officers, I suppose more upon account of their Majesties' favour, than any merit of my own. In journeys, when I was weary of the coach, a servant on horseback would buckle my box, and place it on a cushion before him; and there I had a full prospect of the country on three sides from my three windows. I had in this closet a field-bed and a hammock hung from the ceiling, two chairs

and a table, neatly screwed to the floor, to prevent being tossed about by the agitation of the horse or the coach. And having been long used to sea-voyages, those motions, although sometimes very violent, did not much discompose me.

Whenever I had a mind to see the town, it was always in my travelling-closet, which Glumdalclitch held in her lap in a kind of open sedan, after the fashion of the country, borne by four men, and attended by two others in the Queen's livery. The people who had often heard of me, were very curious to crowd about the sedan, and the girl was complaisant enough to make the bearers stop, and to take me in her hand that I might be more conveniently seen.

I was very desirous to see the chief temple, and particularly the tower belonging to it, which is reckoned the highest in the kingdom. Accordingly one day my nurse carried me thither, but I may truly say I came back disappointed ; for the height is not above three thousand feet, reckoning from the ground to the highest pinnacle top ; which allowing for the difference between the size of those people and us in Europe, is no great matter for admiration, nor at all equal in proportion (if I rightly remember) to Salisbury steeple. But, not to detract from a nation to which during my life I shall acknowledge myself extremely obliged, it must be allowed that whatever this famous tower wants in height is amply made up in beauty and strength. For the walls are near an hundred foot thick, built of hewn stone, whereof each is about forty foot square, and adorned on all sides with statues of gods and emperors cut in marble larger than the life, placed in their several niches. I measured a little finger which had fallen down from one of these statues, and lay unperceived among some rubbish, and found it exactly four foot and an inch in length. Glumdalclitch wrapped it up in a handkerchief, and carried it home in her pocket to keep among other trinkets, of which the girl was very fond, as children at her age usually are.

The King's kitchen is indeed a noble building, vaulted at top, and about six hundred foot high. The great oven is not so wide by ten paces as the cupola at St. Paul's : for I measured the latter on purpose after my return. But if I should describe the kitchen-grate, the prodigious pots and kettles, the joints

of meat turning on the spits, with many other particulars, perhaps I should be hardly believed ; at least a severe critic would be apt to think I enlarged a little, as travellers are often suspected to do. To avoid which censure, I fear I have run too much into the other extreme ; and that if this treatise should happen to be translated into the language of Brobdingnag (which is the general name of that kingdom) and transmitted thither, the King and his people would have reason to complain that I had done them an injury by a false and diminutive representation.

His Majesty seldom keeps above six hundred horses in his stables : they are generally from fifty-four to sixty foot high. But when he goes abroad on solemn days, he is attended for state by a militia guard of five hundred horse, which indeed I thought was the most splendid sight that could be ever beheld, till I saw part of his army in battalia, whereof I shall find another occasion to speak.

CHAPTER V

Several adventures that happened to the Author. The execution of a criminal. The Author shows his skill in navigation.

I SHOULD have lived happy enough in that country, if my littleness had not exposed me to several ridiculous and troublesome accidents, some of which I shall venture to relate. Glumdalclitch often carried me into the gardens of the court in my smaller box, and would sometimes take me out of it and hold me in her hand, or set me down to walk. I remember, before the dwarf left the Queen, he followed us one day into those gardens, and my nurse having set me down, he and I being close together, near some dwarf apple-trees, I must needs show my wit by a silly allusion between him and the trees, which happens to hold in their language as it doth in ours. Whereupon, the malicious rogue watching his opportunity, when I was walking under one of them, shook it directly over my head, by which a dozen apples, each of them near as large as a Bristol barrel, came tumbling about my ears ; one of them hit me on the back as I chanced to stoop, and knocked me down flat on my face, but I received no other hurt, and the dwarf was pardoned at my desire, because I had given the provocation.

Another day Glumdalclitch left me on a smooth grass-plot to divert myself while she walked at some distance with her governess. In the meantime there suddenly fell such a violent shower of hail, that I was immediately by the force of it struck to the ground : and when I was down, the hailstones gave me such cruel bangs all over the body, as if I had been pelted with tennis-balls ; however I made a shift to creep on all four, and shelter myself by lying flat on my face on the lee-side of a border of lemon thyme, but so bruised from head to foot that I could not go abroad in ten days. Neither is this at all to be wondered at, because nature in that country observing the

same proportion through all her operations, a hailstone is near eighteen hundred times as large as one in Europe, which I can assert upon experience, having been so curious to weigh and measure them.

But a more dangerous accident happened to me in the same garden, when my little nurse believing she had put me in a secure place, which I often entreated her to do, that I might enjoy my own thoughts, and having left my box at home to avoid the trouble of carrying it, went to another part of the garden with her governess and some ladies of her acquaintance. While she was absent and out of hearing, a small white spaniel belonging to one of the chief gardeners, having got by accident into the garden, happened to range near the place where I lay. The dog following the scent, came directly up, and taking me in his mouth, ran straight to his master, wagging his tail, and set me gently on the ground. By good fortune he had been so well taught, that I was carried between his teeth without the least hurt, or even tearing my clothes. But the poor gardener, who knew me well, and had a great kindness for me, was in a terrible fright. He gently took me up in both his hands, and asked me how I did; but I was so amazed and out of breath, that I could not speak a word. In a few minutes I came to myself, and he carried me safe to my little nurse, who by this time had returned to the place where she left me, and was in cruel agonies when I did not appear, nor answer when she called: she severely reprimanded the gardener on account of his dog. But the thing was hushed up, and never known at court; for the girl was afraid of the Queen's anger, and truly as to myself, I thought it would not be for my reputation that such a story should go about.

This accident absolutely determined Glumdalclitch never to trust me abroad for the future out of her sight. I had been long afraid of this resolution, and therefore concealed from her some little unlucky adventures that happened in those times when I was left by myself. Once a kite hovering over the garden made a stoop at me, and if I had not resolutely drawn my hanger, and run under a thick espalier, he would have certainly carried me away in his talons. Another time walking to the top of a fresh mole-hill, I fell to my neck in the hole

through which that animal had cast up the earth, and coined some lie, not worth remembering, to excuse myself for spoiling my clothes. I likewise broke my right shin against the shell of a snail, which I happened to stumble over, as I was walking alone, and thinking on poor England.

I cannot tell whether I were more pleased or mortified, to observe in those solitary walks that the smaller birds did not appear to be at all afraid of me, but would hop about within a yard distance, looking for worms and other food with as much indifference and security as if no creature at all were near them. I remember a thrush had the confidence to snatch out of my hand with his bill a piece of cake that Glumdalclitch had just given me for my breakfast. When I attempted to catch any of these birds, they would boldly turn against me, endeavouring to pick my fingers, which I durst not venture within their reach ; and then they would hop back unconcerned to hunt for worms or snails, as they did before. But one day I took a thick cudgel, and threw it with all my strength so luckily at a linnet that I knocked him down, and seizing him by the neck with both my hands, ran with him in triumph to my nurse. However, the bird, who had only been stunned, recovering himself, gave me so many boxes with his wings on both sides of my head and body, though I held him at arm's length, and was out of the reach of his claws, that I was twenty times thinking to let him go. But I was soon relieved by one of our servants, who wrung off the bird's neck, and I had him next day for dinner, by the Queen's command. This linnet, as near as I can remember, seemed to be somewhat larger than an English swan.

The Maids of Honour often invited Glumdalclitch to their apartments, and desired she would bring me along with her, on purpose to have the pleasure of seeing and touching me.

One day a young gentleman, who was nephew to my nurse's governess, came and pressed them both to see an execution. It was of a man who had murdered one of that gentleman's intimate acquaintance. Glumdalclitch was prevailed on to be of the company, very much against her inclination, for she was naturally tender-hearted : and as for myself, although I abhorred such kind of spectacles, yet my curiosity tempted me

to see something that I thought must be extraordinary. The malefactor was fixed in a chair upon a scaffold erected for the purpose, and his head cut off at a blow with a sword of about forty foot long. The veins and arteries spouted up such a prodigious quantity of blood, and so high in the air, that the great *jet d'eau* at Versailles was not equal for the time it lasted; and the head, when it fell on the scaffold floor, gave such a bounce, as made me start, although I were at least half an English mile distant.

The Queen, who often used to hear me talk of my sea-voyages, and took all occasions to divert me when I was melancholy, asked me whether I understood how to handle a sail or an oar, and whether a little exercise of rowing might not be convenient for my health. I answered that I understood both very well. For although my proper employment had been to be surgeon or doctor to the ship, yet often, upon a pinch, I was forced to work like a common mariner. But I could not see how this could be done in their country, where the smallest wherry was equal to a first-rate man of war among us, and such a boat as I could manage would never live in any of their rivers. Her Majesty said, if I would contrive a boat, her own joiner should make it, and she would provide a place for me to sail in. The fellow was an ingenious workman, and by my instructions in ten days finished a pleasure-boat with all its tackling, able conveniently to hold eight Europeans. When it was finished, the Queen was so delighted, that she ran with it in her lap to the King, who ordered it to be put in a cistern full of water, with me in it, by way of trial; where I could not manage my two sculls, or little oars, for want of room. But the Queen had before contrived another project. She ordered the joiner to make a wooden trough of three hundred foot long, fifty broad, and eight deep; which being well pitched to prevent leaking, was placed on the floor along the wall, in an outer room of the palace. It had a cock near the bottom to let out the water when it began to grow stale, and two servants could easily fill it in half an hour. Here I often used to row for my own diversion, as well as that of the Queen and her ladies, who thought themselves well entertained with my skill and agility. Sometimes I would put up my sail, and then

my business was only to steer, while the ladies gave me a gale with their fans; and when they were weary, some of the pages would blow my sail forward with their breath, while I showed my art by steering starboard or larboard as I pleased. When I had done, Glumdalclitch always carried my boat into her closet, and hung it on a nail to dry.

In this exercise I once met an accident which had like to have cost me my life. For one of the pages having put my boat into the trough, the governess who attended Glumdalclitch very officiously lifted me up to place me in the boat, but I happened to slip through her fingers, and should have infallibly fallen down forty feet upon the floor, if by the luckiest chance in the world, I had not been stopped by a corking-pin that stuck in the good gentlewoman's stomacher; the head of the pin passed between my shirt and the waistband of my breeches, and thus I was held by the middle in the air till Glumdalclitch ran to my relief.

Another time, one of the servants, whose office it was to fill my trough every third day with fresh water, was so careless to let a huge frog (not perceiving it) slip out of his pail. The frog lay concealed till I was put into my boat, but then seeing a resting-place, climbed up, and made it lean so much on one side, that I was forced to balance it with all my weight on the other, to prevent overturning. When the frog was got in, it hopped at once half the length of the boat, and then over my head, backwards and forwards, daubing my face and clothes with its odious slime. The largeness of its features made it appear the most deformed animal that can be conceived. However, I desired Glumdalclitch to let me deal with it alone. I banged it a good while with one of my sculls, and at last forced it to leap out of the boat.

But the greatest danger I ever underwent in that kingdom was from a monkey, who belonged to one of the clerks of the kitchen. Glumdalclitch had locked me up in her closet, while she went somewhere upon business or a visit. The weather being very warm, the closet window was left open, as well as the windows and the door of my bigger box, in which I usually lived, because of its largeness and conveniency. As I sat quietly meditating at my table, I heard something

bounce in at the closet window, and skip about from one side to the other; whereat, although I was much alarmed, yet I ventured to look out, but stirred not from my seat; and then I saw this frolicsome animal, frisking and leaping up and down, till at last he came to my box, which he seemed to view with great pleasure and curiosity, peeping in at the door and every window. I retreated to the farther corner of my room, or box, but the monkey looking in at every side, put me into such a fright, that I wanted presence of mind to conceal myself under the bed, as I might easily have done. After some time spent in peeping, grinning, and chattering, he at last espied me, and reaching one of his paws in at the door, as a cat does when she plays with a mouse, although I often shifted place to avoid him, he at length seized the lappet of my coat (which being made of that country cloth, was very thick and strong) and dragged me out. He took me up in his right fore-foot, and held me as a nurse does a child she is going to suckle, just as I have seen the same sort of creature do with a kitten in Europe: and when I offered to struggle, he squeezed me so hard, that I thought it more prudent to submit. I have good reason to believe that he took me for a young one of his own species, by his often stroking my face very gently with his other paw. In these diversions he was interrupted by a noise at the closet door, as if somebody were opening it; whereupon he suddenly leaped up to the window at which he had come in, and thence upon the leads and gutters, walking upon three legs, and holding me in the fourth, till he clambered up to a roof that was next to ours. I heard Glumdalclitch give a shriek at the moment he was carrying me out. The poor girl was almost distracted: that quarter of the palace was all in an uproar; the servants ran for ladders; the monkey was seen by hundreds in the court, sitting upon the ridge of a building, holding me like a baby in one of his fore-paws, and feeding me with the other, by cramming into my mouth some victuals he had squeezed out of the bag on one side of his chaps, and patting me when I would not eat; whereat many of the rabble below could not forbear laughing; neither do I think they justly ought to be blamed, for without question the sight was ridiculous enough to every body but myself. Some of the people threw up stones, hoping to drive

the monkey down; but this was strictly forbidden, or else very probably my brains had been dashed out.

The ladders were now applied, and mounted by several men, which the monkey observing, and finding himself almost encompassed, not being able to make speed enough with his three legs, let me drop on a ridge tile, and made his escape. Here I sat for some time three hundred yards from the ground, expecting every moment to be blown down by the wind, or to fall by my own giddiness, and come tumbling over and over from the ridge to the eaves; but an honest lad, one of my nurse's footmen, climbed up, and putting me into his breeches pocket, brought me down safe.

I was almost choked with the filthy stuff the monkey had crammed down my throat: but my dear little nurse picked it out of my mouth with a small needle, and then I fell a vomiting, which gave me great relief. Yet I was so weak and bruised in the sides with the squeezes given me by this odious animal, that I was forced to keep my bed a fortnight. The King, Queen, and all the court, sent every day to enquire after my health, and her Majesty made me several visits during my sickness. The monkey was killed, and an order made that no such animal should be kept about the palace.

When I attended the King after my recovery, to return him thanks for his favours, he was pleased to rally me a good deal upon this adventure. He asked me what my thoughts and speculations were while I lay in the monkey's paw, how I liked the victuals he gave me, his manner of feeding, and whether the fresh air on the roof had sharpened my stomach. He desired to know what I would have done upon such an occasion in my own country. I told his Majesty that in Europe we had no monkeys, except such as were brought for curiosities from other places, and so small that I could deal with a dozen of them together, if they presumed to attack me. And as for that monstrous animal with whom I was so lately engaged, (it was indeed as large as an elephant) if my fears had suffered me to think so far as to make use of my hanger (looking fiercely and clapping my hand upon the hilt as I spoke) when he poked his paw into my chamber, perhaps I should have given him such a wound, as would have made him glad to with-

draw it with more haste than he put it in. This I delivered in a firm tone, like a person who was jealous lest his courage should be called in question. However, my speech produced nothing else besides a loud laughter, which all the respect due to his Majesty from those about him could not make them contain. This made me reflect how vain an attempt it is for a man to endeavour doing himself honour among those who are out of all degree of equality or comparison with him. And yet I have seen the moral of my own behaviour very frequent in England since my return, where a little contemptible varlet, without the least title to birth, person, wit, or common sense, shall presume to look with importance, and put himself upon a foot with the greatest persons of the kingdom.

I was every day furnishing the court with some ridiculous story; and Glumdalclitch, although she loved me to excess, yet was arch enough to inform the Queen, whenever I committed any folly that she thought would be diverting to her Majesty. The girl, who had been out of order, was carried by her governess to take the air about an hour's distance, or thirty miles from town. They alighted out of the coach near a small footpath in a field, and Glumdalclitch setting down my travelling box, I went out of it to walk. There was a cow-dung in the path, and I must needs try my activity by attempting to leap over it. I took a run, but unfortunately jumped short, and found myself just in the middle up to my knees. I waded through with some difficulty and one of the footmen wiped me as clean as he could with his handkerchief; for I was filthily bemired, and my nurse confined me to my box till we returned home; where the Queen was soon informed of what had passed, and the footmen spread it about the court, so that all the mirth, for some days, was at my expense.

CHAPTER VI

Several contrivances of the Author to please the King and Queen. He shows his skill in music. The King enquires into the state of Europe, which the Author relates to him. The King's observations thereon.

I USED to attend the King's levee once or twice a week, and had often seen him under the barber's hand, which indeed was at first very terrible to behold; for the razor was almost twice as long as an ordinary scythe. His Majesty, according to the custom of the country, was only shaved twice a week. I once prevailed on the barber to give me some of the suds or lather, out of which I picked forty or fifty of the strongest stumps of hair. I then took a piece of fine wood, and cut it like the back of a comb, making several holes in it at equal distance with as small a needle as I could get from Glumdalclitch. I fixed in the stumps so artificially, scraping and sloping them with my knife toward the points, that I made a very tolerable comb; which was a seasonable supply, my own being so much broken in the teeth, that it was almost useless; neither did I know any artist in that country so nice and exact, as would undertake to make me another.

And this puts me in mind of an amusement wherein I spent many of my leisure hours. I desired the Queen's woman to save for me the combings of her Majesty's hair, whereof in time I got a good quantity, and consulting with my friend the cabinet-maker, who had received general orders to do little jobs for me, I directed him to make two chair-frames, no larger than those I had in my box, and then to bore little holes with a fine awl round those parts where I designed the backs and seats; through these holes I wove the strongest hairs I could pick out, just after the manner of cane-chairs in England. When they were finished, I made a present of them to her Majesty, who kept them in her cabinet, and used to show them for curiosities, as indeed they were the wonder of every one

that beheld them. The Queen would have had me sit upon one of these chairs, but I absolutely refused to obey her, protesting I would rather die a thousand deaths than place my body on those precious hairs that once adorned her Majesty's head. Of these hairs (as I had always a mechanical genius) I likewise made a neat little purse about five foot long, with her Majesty's name deciphered in gold letters, which I gave to Glumdalclitch, by the Queen's consent. To say the truth, it was more for show than use, being not of strength to bear the weight of the larger coins, and therefore she kept nothing in it but some little toys that girls are fond of.

The King, who delighted in music, had frequent concerts at court, to which I was sometimes carried, and set in my box on a table to hear them ; but the noise was so great, that I could hardly distinguish the tunes. I am confident that all the drums and trumpets of a royal army, beating and sounding together just at your ears, could not equal it. My practice was to have my box removed from the places where the performers sat, as far as I could, then to shut the doors and windows of it, and draw the window curtains ; after which I found their music not disagreeable.

I had learned in my youth to play a little upon the spinet. Glumdalclitch kept one in her chamber, and a master attended twice a week to teach her : I call it a spinet, because it somewhat resembled that instrument, and was played upon in the same manner. A fancy came into my head that I would entertain the King and Queen with an English tune upon this instrument. But this appeared extremely difficult ; for the spinet was near sixty foot long, each key being almost a foot wide, so that, with my arms extended, I could not reach to above five keys, and to press them down required a good smart stroke with my fist, which would be too great a labour, and to no purpose. The method I contrived was this. I prepared two round sticks about the bigness of common cudgels ; they were thicker at one end than the other, and I covered the thicker ends with a piece of a mouse's skin, that by rapping on them I might neither damage the tops of the keys, nor interrupt the sound. Before the spinet a bench was placed, about four foot below the keys, and I was put upon the bench.

I ran sideling upon it that way and this, as fast as I could, banging the proper keys with my two sticks, and made a shift to play a jig, to the great satisfaction of both their Majesties: but it was the most violent exercise I ever underwent, and yet I could not strike above sixteen keys, nor, consequently, play the bass and treble together, as other artists do; which was a great disadvantage to my performance.

The King, who, as I before observed, was a prince of excellent understanding, would frequently order that I should be brought in my box, and set upon the table in his closet. He would then command me to bring one of my chairs out of the box, and sit down within three yards distance upon the top of the cabinet, which brought me almost to a level with his face. In this manner I had several conversations with him. I one day took the freedom to tell his Majesty, that the contempt he discovered towards Europe, and the rest of the world, did not seem answerable to those excellent qualities of the mind he was master of. That reason did not extend itself with the bulk of the body: on the contrary, we observed in our country that the tallest persons were usually least provided with it. That among other animals, bees and ants had the reputation of more industry, art and sagacity, than many of the larger kinds. And that, as inconsiderable as he took me to be, I hoped I might live to do his Majesty some signal service. The King heard me with attention, and began to conceive a much better opinion of me than he had ever before. He desired I would give him as exact an account of the government of England as I possibly could; because, as fond as princes commonly are of their own customs (for so he conjectured of other monarchs, by my former discourses), he should be glad to hear of any thing that might deserve imitation.

Imagine with thyself, courteous reader, how often I then wished for the tongue of Demosthenes or Cicero, that might have enabled me to celebrate the praise of my own dear native country in a style equal to its merits and felicity.

I began my discourse by informing his Majesty that our dominions consisted of two islands, which composed three mighty kingdoms under one sovereign, beside our plantations in America. I dwelt long upon the fertility of our soil, and

the temperature of our climate. I then spoke at large upon the constitution of an English Parliament, partly made up of an illustrious body called the House of Peers, persons of the noblest blood, and of the most ancient and ample patrimonies. I described that extraordinary care always taken of their education in arts and arms, to qualify them for being counsellors born to the king and kingdom, to have a share in the legislature, to be members of the highest Court of Judicature, from whence there could be no appeal, and to be champions always ready for the defence of their prince and country, by their valour, conduct, and fidelity. That these were the ornament and bulwark of the kingdom, worthy followers of their most renowned ancestors, whose honour had been the reward of their virtue, from which their posterity were never once known to degenerate. To these were joined several holy persons, as part of that assembly, under the title of Bishops, whose peculiar business it is to take care of religion, and of those who instruct the people therein. These were searched and sought out through the whole nation, by the prince and his wisest counsellors, among such of the priesthood as were most deservedly distinguished by the sanctity of their lives, and the depth of their erudition; who were indeed the spiritual fathers of the clergy and the people.

That the other part of the Parliament consisted of an assembly called the House of Commons, who were all principal gentlemen, freely picked and culled out by the people themselves, for their great abilities and love of their country, to represent the wisdom of the whole nation. And these two bodies make up the most august assembly in Europe, to whom, in conjunction with the prince, the whole legislature is committed.

I then descended to the Courts of Justice, over which the Judges, those venerable sages and interpreters of the law, presided, for determining the disputed rights and properties of men, as well as for the punishment of vice, and protection of innocence. I mentioned the prudent management of our treasury; the valour and achievements of our forces by sea and land. I computed the number of our people, by reckoning how many millions there might be of each religious sect, or political party among us. I did not omit even our sports and

pastimes, or any other particular which I thought might redound to the honour of my country. And I finished all with a brief historical account of affairs and events in England for about an hundred years past.

This conversation was not ended under five audiences, each of several hours, and the King heard the whole with great attention, frequently taking notes of what I spoke, as well as memorandums of several questions he intended to ask me.

When I had put an end to these long discourses, his Majesty in a sixth audience, consulting his notes, proposed many doubts, queries, and objections, upon every article. He asked what methods were used to cultivate the minds and bodies of our young nobility, and in what kind of business they commonly spent the first and teachable part of their lives. What course was taken to supply that assembly when any noble family became extinct. What qualifications were necessary in those who were to be created new lords. Whether the humour of the prince, a sum of money to a court lady, or a prime minister, or a design of strengthening a party opposite to the public interest, ever happened to be motives in those advancements. What share of knowledge these lords had in the laws of their country, and how they came by it, so as to enable them to decide the properties of their fellow-subjects in the last resort. Whether they were always so free from avarice, partialities, or want, that a bribe, or some other sinister view, could have no place among them. Whether these holy lords I spoke of were always promoted to that rank upon account of their knowledge in religious matters, and the sanctity of their lives, had never been compliers with the times while they were common priests, or slavish prostitute chaplains to some nobleman, whose opinions they continued servilely to follow after they were admitted into that assembly.

He then desired to know what arts were practised in electing those whom I called commoners: whether a stranger with a strong purse might not influence the vulgar voters to choose him before their own landlord, or the most considerable gentleman in the neighbourhood. How it came to pass, that people were so violently bent upon getting into this assembly, which

I allowed to be a great trouble and expense, often to the ruin of their families, without any salary or pension : because this appeared such an exalted strain of virtue and public spirit, that his Majesty seemed to doubt it might possibly not be always sincere : and he desired to know whether such zealous gentlemen could have any views of refunding themselves for the charges and trouble they were at, by sacrificing the public good to the designs of a weak and vicious prince in conjunction with a corrupted ministry. He multiplied his questions, and sifted me thoroughly upon every part of this head, proposing numberless enquiries and objections, which I think it not prudent or convenient to repeat.

Upon what I said in relation to our Courts of Justice, his Majesty desired to be satisfied in several points : and this I was the better able to do, having been formerly almost ruined by a long suit in chancery, which was decreed for me with costs. He asked, what time was usually spent in determining between right and wrong, and what degree of expense. Whether advocates and orators had liberty to plead in causes manifestly known to be unjust, vexatious, or oppressive. Whether party in religion or politics were observed to be of any weight in the scale of justice. Whether those pleading orators were persons educated in the general knowledge of equity, or only in provincial, national, and other local customs. Whether they or their judges had any part in penning those laws which they assumed the liberty of interpreting and glossing upon at their pleasure. Whether they had ever at different times pleaded for and against the same cause, and cited precedents to prove contrary opinions. Whether they were a rich or a poor corporation. Whether they received any pecuniary reward for pleading or delivering their opinions. And particularly whether they were ever admitted as members in the lower senate.

He fell next upon the management of our treasury ; and said he thought my memory had failed me, because I computed our taxes at about five or six millions a year, and when I came to mention the issues, he found they sometimes amounted to more than double ; for the notes he had taken were very particular in this point, because he hoped, as he told me, that

the knowledge of our conduct might be useful to him, and he could not be deceived in his calculations. But, if what I told him were true, he was still at a loss how a kingdom could run out of its estate like a private person. He asked me, who were our creditors ; and where we should find money to pay them. He wondered to hear me talk of such chargeable and extensive wars ; that certainly we must be a quarrelsome people, or live among very bad neighbours, and that our generals must needs be richer than our kings. He asked what business we had out of our own islands, unless upon the score of trade or treaty, or to defend the coasts with our fleet. Above all, he was amazed to hear me talk of a mercenary standing army in the midst of peace, and among a free people. He said, if we were governed by our own consent in the persons of our representatives, he could not imagine of whom we were afraid, or against whom we were to fight ; and would hear my opinion, whether a private man's house might not better be defended by himself, his children, and family, than by half a dozen rascals picked up at a venture in the streets, for small wages, who might get an hundred times more by cutting their throats.

He laughed at my odd kind of arithmetic (as he was pleased to call it) in reckoning the numbers of our people by a computation drawn from the several sects among us in religion and politics. He said, he knew no reason, why those who entertain opinions prejudicial to the public, should be obliged to change, or should not be obliged to conceal them. And as it was tyranny in any government to require the first, so it was weakness not to enforce the second : for a man may be allowed to keep poisons in his closet, but not to vend them about for cordials.

He observed that among the diversions of our nobility and gentry I had mentioned gaming. He desired to know at what age this entertainment was usually taken up, and when it was laid down ; how much of their time it employed ; whether it ever went so high as to affect their fortunes ; whether mean vicious people, by their dexterity in that art, might not arrive at great riches, and sometimes keep our very nobles in dependence, as well as habituate them to vile companions, wholly take them from the improvement of their minds, and force them,

by the losses they have received, to learn and practise that infamous dexterity upon others.

He was perfectly astonished with the historical account I gave him of our affairs during the last century, protesting it was only an heap of conspiracies, rebellions, murders, massacres, revolutions, banishments, the very worst effects that avarice, faction, hypocrisy, perfidiousness, cruelty, rage, madness, hatred, envy, lust, malice, or ambition could produce.

His Majesty in another audience was at the pains to recapitulate the sum of all I had spoken, compared the questions he made with the answers I had given, then taking me into his hands, and stroking me gently, delivered himself in these words, which I shall never forget nor the manner he spoke them in : My little friend Grildrig, you have made a most admirable panegyric upon your country ; you have clearly proved that ignorance, idleness, and vice, may be sometimes the only ingredients for qualifying a legislator ; that laws are best explained, interpreted, and applied by those whose interest and abilities lie in perverting, confounding, and eluding them. I observe among you some lines of an institution, which in its original might have been tolerable, but these half erased, and the rest wholly blurred and blotted by corruptions. It doth not appear from all you have said, how any one virtue is required towards the procurement of any one station among you ; much less that men are ennobled on account of their virtue, that priests are advanced for their piety or learning, soldiers for their conduct or valour, judges for their integrity, senators for the love of their country, or counsellors for their wisdom. As for yourself (continued the King) who have spent the greatest part of your life in travelling, I am well disposed to hope you may hitherto have escaped many vices of your country. But by what I have gathered from your own relation, and the answers I have with much pains wringed and extorted from you, I cannot but conclude the bulk of your natives to be the most pernicious race of little odious vermin that nature ever suffered to crawl upon the surface of the earth.

CHAPTER VII

The Author's love of his country. He makes a proposal of much advantage to the King, which is rejected. The King's great ignorance in politics. The learning of that country very imperfect and confined. Their laws, and military affairs, and parties in the State.

NOTHING but an extreme love of truth could have hindered me from concealing this part of my story. It was in vain to discover my resentments, which were always turned into ridicule; and I was forced to rest with patience while my noble and most beloved country was so injuriously treated. I am heartily sorry as any of my readers can possibly be, that such an occasion was given: but this prince happened to be so curious and inquisitive upon every particular, that it could not consist either with gratitude or good manners to refuse giving him what satisfaction I was able. Yet thus much I may be allowed to say in my own vindication, that I artfully eluded many of his questions, and gave to every point a more favourable turn by many degrees than the strictness of truth would allow. For I have always borne that laudable partiality to my own country, which Dionysius Halicarnassensis with so much justice recommends to an historian. I would hide the frailties and deformities of my political mother, and place her virtues and beauties in the most advantageous light. This was my sincere endeavour in those many discourses I had with that mighty monarch, although it unfortunately failed of success.

But great allowances should be given to a King who lives wholly secluded from the rest of the world, and must therefore be altogether unacquainted with the manners and customs that most prevail in other nations; the want of which knowledge will ever produce many prejudices, and a certain narrowness of thinking, from which we and the politer countries of Europe are wholly exempted. And it would be hard indeed, if so remote a prince's notions of virtue and vice were to be offered as a standard for all mankind.

To confirm what I have now said, and further, to show the miserable effects of a confined education, I shall here insert a passage which will hardly obtain belief. In hopes to ingratiate myself farther into his Majesty's favour, I told him of an invention discovered between three and four hundred years ago, to make a certain powder, into an heap of which the smallest spark of fire falling, would kindle the whole in a moment, although it were as big as a mountain, and make it all fly up in the air together, with a noise and agitation greater than thunder. That a proper quantity of this powder rammed into an hollow tube of brass or iron, according to its bigness, would drive a ball of iron or lead with such violence and speed, as nothing was able to sustain its force. That the largest balls thus discharged, would not only destroy whole ranks of an army at once, but batter the strongest walls to the ground, sink down ships, with a thousand men in each, to the bottom of the sea; and, when linked together by a chain, would cut through masts and rigging, divide hundreds of bodies in the middle, and lay all waste before them. That we often put this powder into large hollow balls of iron, and discharged them by an engine into some city we were besieging, which would rip up the pavements, tear the houses to pieces, burst and throw splinters on every side, dashing out the brains of all who came near. That I knew the ingredients very well, which were cheap, and common; I understood the manner of compounding them, and could direct his workmen how to make those tubes of a size proportionable to all other things in his Majesty's kingdom, and the largest need not to be above an hundred foot long; twenty or thirty of which tubes, charged with the proper quantity of powder and balls, would batter down the walls of the strongest town in his dominions in a few hours, or destroy the whole metropolis, if ever it should pretend to dispute his absolute commands. This I humbly offered to his Majesty, as a small tribute of acknowledgment in return of so many marks that I had received of his royal favour and protection.

The King was struck with horror at the description I had given of those terrible engines, and the proposal I had made. He was amazed how so impotent and grovelling an insect as I (these were his expressions) could entertain such inhuman ideas,

and in so familiar a manner as to appear wholly unmoved at all the scenes of blood and desolation, which I had painted as the common effects of those destructive machines, whereof he said some evil genius, enemy to mankind, must have been the first contriver. As for himself, he protested that although few things delighted him so much as new discoveries in art or in nature, yet he would rather lose half his kingdom than be privy to such a secret, which he commanded me, as I valued my life, never to mention any more.

A strange effect of narrow principles and short views! that a prince possessed of every quality which procures veneration, love, and esteem; of strong parts, great wisdom, and profound learning, endued with admirable talents for government, and almost adored by his subjects, should from a nice unnecessary scruple, whereof in Europe we can have no conception, let slip an opportunity put into his hands, that would have made him absolute master of the lives, the liberties, and the fortunes of his people. Neither do I say this with the least intention to detract from the many virtues of that excellent King, whose character I am sensible will on this account be very much lessened in the opinion of an English reader: but I take this defect among them to have risen from their ignorance, they not having hitherto reduced politics into a science, as the more acute wits of Europe have done. For I remember very well, in a discourse one day with the King, when I happened to say there were several thousand books among us written upon the art of government, it gave him (directly contrary to my intention) a very mean opinion of our understandings. He professed both to abominate and despise all mystery, refinement, and intrigue, either in a prince or a minister. He could not tell what I meant by secrets of state, where an enemy or some rival nation were not in the case. He confined the knowledge of governing within very narrow bounds; to common sense and reason, to justice and lenity, to the speedy determination of civil and criminal causes; with some other obvious topics, which are not worth considering. And he gave it for his opinion, that whoever could make two ears of corn or two blades of grass to grow upon a spot of ground where only one grew before, would deserve better of mankind, and do more

essential service to his country than the whole race of politicians put together.

The learning of this people is very defective, consisting only in morality, history, poetry, and mathematics, wherein they must be allowed to excel. But the last of these is wholly applied to what may be useful in life, to the improvement of agriculture, and all mechanical arts ; so that among us it would be little esteemed. And as to ideas, entities, abstractions, and transcendentals, I could never drive the least conception into their heads.

No law of that country must exceed in words the number of letters in their alphabet, which consists only in two and twenty. But indeed few of them extend even to that length. They are expressed in the most plain and simple terms, wherein those people are not mercurial enough to discover above one interpretation ; and to write a comment upon any law is a capital crime. As to the decision of civil causes, or proceedings against criminals, their precedents are so few, that they have little reason to boast of any extraordinary skill in either.

They have had the art of printing, as well as the Chinese, time out of mind. But their libraries are not very large ; for that of the King's, which is reckoned the biggest, doth not amount to above a thousand volumes, placed in a gallery of twelve hundred foot long, from whence I had liberty to borrow what books I pleased. The Queen's joiner had contrived in one of Glumdalclitch's rooms a kind of wooden machine five and twenty foot high, formed like a standing ladder ; the steps were each fifty foot long. It was indeed a moveable pair of stairs, the lowest end placed at ten foot distance from the wall of the chamber. The book I had a mind to read was put up leaning against the wall. I first mounted to the upper step of the ladder, and turning my face towards the book, began at the top of the page, and so walking to the right and left about eight or ten paces, according to the length of the lines, till I had gotten a little below the level of my eyes, and then descending gradually till I came to the bottom ; after which I mounted again, and began the other page in the same manner, and so turned over the leaf, which I could easily do with both my hands,

for it was as thick and stiff as a pasteboard, and in the largest folios not above eighteen or twenty foot long.

Their style is clear, masculine, and smooth, but not florid, for they avoid nothing more than multiplying unnecessary words, or using various expressions. I have perused many of their books, especially those in history and morality. Among the rest, I was much diverted with a little old treatise, which always lay in Glumdalclitch's bed-chamber, and belonged to her governess, a grave elderly gentlewoman, who dealt in writings of morality and devotion. The book treats of the weakness of human kind, and is in little esteem, except among the women and the vulgar. However, I was curious to see what an author of that country could say upon such a subject. This writer went through all the usual topics of European moralists, showing how diminutive, contemptible, and helpless an animal was man in his own nature ; how unable to defend himself from the inclemencies of the air, or the fury of wild beasts ; how much he was excelled by one creature in strength, by another in speed, by a third in foresight, by a fourth in industry. He added, that nature was degenerated in these latter declining ages of the world, and could now produce only small abortive births in comparison of those in ancient times. He said, it was very reasonable to think, not only that the species of men were originally much larger, but also, that there must have been giants in former ages, which, as it is asserted by history and tradition, so it hath been confirmed by huge bones and skulls casually dug up in several parts of the kingdom, far exceeding the common dwindled race of man in our days. He argued, that the very laws of nature absolutely required we should have been made in the beginning, of a size more large and robust, not so liable to destruction from every little accident of a tile falling from a house, or a stone cast from the hand of a boy, or of being drowned in a little brook. From this way of reasoning the author drew several moral applications useful in the conduct of life, but needless here to repeat. For my own part, I could not avoid reflecting how universally this talent was spread, of drawing lectures in morality, or indeed rather matter of discontent and repining, from the quarrels we raise with nature. And I believe, upon a strict enquiry, those

quarrels might be shown as ill grounded among us as they are among that people.

As to their military affairs, they boast that the King's army consists of an hundred and seventy-six thousand foot, and thirty-two thousand horse: if that may be called an army which is made up of tradesmen in the several cities, and farmers in the country, whose commanders are only the nobility and gentry, without pay or reward. They are indeed perfect enough in their exercises, and under very good discipline, wherein I saw no great merit; for how should it be otherwise, where every farmer is under the command of his own landlord, and every citizen under that of the principal men in his own city, chosen after the manner of Venice by ballot?

I have often seen the militia of Lorbrulgrud drawn out to exercise in a great field near the city of twenty miles square. They were in all not above twenty-five thousand foot, and six thousand horse; but it was impossible for me to compute their number, considering the space of ground they took up. A cavalier mounted on a large steed, might be about an hundred foot high. I have seen this whole body of horse, upon a word of command, draw their swords at once, and brandish them in the air. Imagination can figure nothing so grand, so surprising, and so astonishing. It looked as if ten thousand flashes of lightning were darting at the same time from every quarter of the sky.

I was curious to know how this prince, to whose dominions there is no access from any other country, came to think of armies, or to teach his people the practice of military discipline. But I was soon informed, both by conversation and reading their histories. For in the course of many ages they have been troubled with the same disease to which the whole race of mankind is subject; the nobility often contending for power, the people for liberty, and the King for absolute dominion. All which, however happily tempered by the laws of the kingdom, have been sometimes violated by each of the three parties, and have once or more occasioned civil wars, the last whereof was happily put an end to by this prince's grandfather by a general composition; and the militia, then settled with common consent, hath been ever since kept in the strictest duty.

CHAPTER VIII

The King and Queen make a progress to the frontiers. The Author attends them. The manner in which he leaves the country very particularly related. He returns to England.

I HAD always a strong impulse that I should some time recover my liberty, though it was impossible to conjecture by what means, or to form any project with the least hope of succeeding. The ship in which I sailed was the first ever known to be driven within sight of that coast, and the King had given strict orders, that if at any time another appeared, it should be taken ashore, and with all its crew and passengers brought in a tumbril to Lorbrulgrud. He was strongly bent to get me a woman of my own size, by whom I might propagate the breed: but I think I should rather have died than undergone the disgrace of leaving a posterity to be kept in cages like tame canary birds, and perhaps, in time, sold about the kingdom to persons of quality for curiosities. I was, indeed, treated with much kindness; I was the favourite of a great King and Queen, and the delight of the whole court, but it was upon such a foot as ill became the dignity of human kind. I could never forget those domestic pledges I had left behind me. I wanted to be among people with whom I could converse upon even terms, and walk about the streets and fields without fear of being trod to death like a frog or a young puppy. But my deliverance came sooner than I expected, and in a manner not very common; the whole story and circumstances of which I shall faithfully relate.

I had now been two years in this country; and about the beginning of the third, Glumdalclitch and I attended the King and Queen in a progress to the south coast of the kingdom. I was carried, as usual, in my travelling-box, which, as I have already described, was a very convenient closet of twelve foot

wide. And I had ordered a hammock to be fixed by silken ropes from the four corners at the top, to break the jolts, when a servant carried me before him on horseback, as I sometimes desired, and would often sleep in my hammock while we were upon the road. On the roof of my closet, just over the middle of the hammock, I ordered the joiner to cut out a hole of a foot square, to give me air in hot weather as I slept, which hole I shut at pleasure with a board that drew backwards and forwards through a groove.

When we came to our journey's end, the King thought proper to pass a few days at a palace he hath near Flanflasnic, a city within eighteen English miles of the seaside. Glumdalclitch and I were much fatigued ; I had gotten a small cold, but the poor girl was so ill as to be confined to her chamber. I longed to see the ocean, which must be the only scene of my escape, if ever it should happen. I pretended to be worse than I really was, and desired leave to take the fresh air of the sea, with a page whom I was very fond of, and who had sometimes been trusted with me. I shall never forget with what unwillingness Glumdalclitch consented, nor the strict charge she gave the page to be careful of me, bursting at the same time into a flood of tears, as if she had some foreboding of what was to happen. The boy took me out in my box about half an hour's walk from the palace, towards the rocks on the sea-shore. I ordered him to set me down, and lifting up one of my sashes, cast many a wistful melancholy look towards the sea. I found myself not very well, and told the page that I had a mind to take a nap in my hammock, which I hoped would do me good. I got in, and the boy shut the window close down to keep out the cold. I soon fell asleep, and all I can conjecture is, that while I slept, the page, thinking no danger could happen, went among the rocks to look for birds' eggs, having before observed him from my window searching about, and picking up one or two in the clefts. Be that as it will, I found myself suddenly awaked with a violent pull upon the ring which was fastened at the top of my box for the conveniency of carriage. I felt my box raised very high in the air, and then borne forward with prodigious speed. The first jolt had like to have shaken me out of my hammock, but afterwards the motion was easy

enough. I called out several times as loud as I could raise my voice, but all to no purpose. I looked towards my windows, and could see nothing but the clouds and sky. I heard a noise just over my head like the clapping of wings, and then began to perceive the woful condition I was in; that some eagle had got the ring of my box in his beak, with an intent to let it fall on a rock like a tortoise in a shell, and then pick out my body, and devour it. For the sagacity and smell of this bird enable him to discover his quarry at a great distance, though better concealed than I could be within a two-inch board.

In a little time I observed the noise and flutter of wings to increase very fast, and my box was tossed up and down, like a sign-post in a windy day. I heard several bangs or buffets, as I thought, given to the eagle (for such I am certain it must have been that held the ring of my box in his beak), and then all on a sudden felt myself falling perpendicularly down for above a minute, but with such incredible swiftness that I almost lost my breath. My fall was stopped by a terrible squash, that sounded louder to my ears than the cataract of Niagara; after which I was quite in the dark for another minute, and then my box began to rise so high that I could see light from the tops of my windows. I now perceived that I was fallen into the sea. My box, by the weight of my body, the goods that were in, and the broad plates of iron fixed for strength at the four corners of the top and bottom, floated about five foot deep in water. I did then, and do now suppose that the eagle which flew away with my box was pursued by two or three others, and forced to let me drop while he was defending himself against the rest, who hoped to share in the prey. The plates of iron fastened at the bottom of the box (for those were the strongest) preserved the balance while it fell, and hindered it from being broken on the surface of the water. Every joint of it was well grooved, and the door did not move on hinges, but up and down like a sash, which kept my closet so tight that very little water came in. I got with much difficulty out of my hammock, having first ventured to draw back the slip-board on the roof already mentioned, contrived on purpose to let in air, for want of which I found myself almost stifled.

How often did I then wish myself with my dear Glum-

dalclitch, from whom one single hour had so far divided me! And I may say with truth, that in the midst of my own misfortunes I could not forbear lamenting my poor nurse, the grief she would suffer for my loss, the displeasure of the Queen, and the ruin of her fortune. Perhaps many travellers have not been under greater difficulties and distress than I was at this juncture, expecting every moment to see my box dashed in pieces, or at least overset by the first violent blast, or a rising wave. A breach in one single pane of glass would have been immediate death: nor could any thing have preserved the windows, but the strong lattice wires placed on the outside against accidents in travelling. I saw the water ooze in at several crannies, although the leaks were not considerable, and I endeavoured to stop them as well as I could. I was not able to lift up the roof of my closet, which otherwise I certainly should have done, and sat on the top of it, where I might at least preserve myself some hours longer than by being shut up, as I may call it, in the hold. Or, if I escaped these dangers for a day or two, what could I expect but a miserable death of cold and hunger! I was four hours under these circumstances, expecting and indeed wishing every moment to be my last.

I have already told the reader that there were two strong staples fixed upon that side of my box which had no window, and into which the servant who used to carry me on horseback would put a leathern belt, and buckle it about his waist. Being in this disconsolate state, I heard or at least thought I heard some kind of grating noise on that side of my box where the staples were fixed, and soon after I began to fancy that the box was pulled or towed along in the sea; for I now and then felt a sort of tugging, which made the waves rise near the tops of my windows, leaving me almost in the dark. This gave me some faint hopes of relief, although I was not able to imagine how it could be brought about. I ventured to unscrew one of my chairs, which were always fastened to the floor; and having made a hard shift to screw it down again directly under the slipping-board that I had lately opened, I mounted on the chair, and putting my mouth as near as I could to the hole, I called for help in a loud voice, and in all the languages I understood. I then fastened my handkerchief to a stick I usually

carried, and thrusting it up the hole, waved it several times in the air, that if any boat or ship were near, the seamen might conjecture some unhappy mortal to be shut up in the box.

I found no effect from all I could do, but plainly perceived my closet to be moved along; and in the space of an hour, or better, that side of the box where the staples were, and had no window, struck against something that was hard. I apprehended it to be a rock, and found myself tossed more than ever. I plainly heard a noise upon the cover of my closet, like that of a cable, and the grating of it as it passed through the ring. I then found myself hoisted up by degrees at least three foot higher than I was before. Whereupon I again thrust up my stick and handkerchief, calling for help till I was almost hoarse. In return to which, I heard a great shout repeated three times, giving me such transports of joy, as are not to be conceived but by those who feel them. I now heard a trampling over my head, and somebody calling through the hole with a loud voice in the English tongue: If there be any body below, let them speak. I answered, I was an Englishman, drawn by ill fortune into the greatest calamity that ever any creature underwent, and begged, by all that is moving, to be delivered out of the dungeon I was in. The voice replied, I was safe, for my box was fastened to their ship; and the carpenter should immediately come and saw an hole in the cover, large enough to pull me out. I answered, that was needless and would take up too much time, for there was no more to be done, but let one of the crew put his finger into the ring, and take the box out of the sea into the ship, and so into the captain's cabin. Some of them upon hearing me talk so wildly thought I was mad; others laughed; for indeed it never came into my head that I was now got among people of my own stature and strength. The carpenter came, and in a few minutes sawed a passage about four foot square, then let down a small ladder, upon which I mounted, and from thence was taken into the ship in a very weak condition.

The sailors were all in amazement, and asked me a thousand questions, which I had no inclination to answer. I was equally confounded at the sight of so many pigmies, for such I took them to be, after having so long accustomed my eyes to the monstrous objects I had left. But the Captain, Mr.

Thomas Wilcocks, an honest worthy Shropshire man, observing I was ready to faint, took me into his cabin, gave me a cordial to comfort me, and made me turn in upon his own bed, advising me to take a little rest, of which I had great need. Before I went to sleep I gave him to understand that I had some valuable furniture in my box, too good to be lost, a fine hammock, an handsome field-bed, two chairs, a table, and a cabinet ; that my closet was hung on all sides, or rather quilted, with silk and cotton ; that if he would let one of the crew bring my closet into his cabin, I would open it there before him, and show him my goods. The Captain hearing me utter these absurdities, concluded I was raving : however (I suppose to pacify me), he promised to give order as I desired, and going upon deck sent some of his men down into my closet, from whence (as I afterwards found) they drew up all my goods, and stripped off the quilting ; but the chairs, cabinet, and bedstead, being screwed to the floor, were much damaged by the ignorance of the seamen, who tore them up by force. Then they knocked off some of the boards for the use of the ship, and when they had got all they had a mind for, let the hull drop into the sea, which by reason of many breaches made in the bottom and sides, sunk to rights. And indeed I was glad not to have been a spectator of the havoc they made ; because I am confident it would have sensibly touched me, by bringing former passages into my mind, which I had rather forget.

I slept some hours, but perpetually disturbed with dreams of the place I had left, and the dangers I had escaped. However, upon waking I found myself much recovered. It was now about eight o'clock at night, and the Captain ordered supper immediately, thinking I had already fasted too long. He entertained me with great kindness, observing me not to look wildly, or talk inconsistently : and when we were left alone, desired I would give him a relation of my travels, and by what accident I came to be set adrift in that monstrous wooden chest. He said, that about twelve o'clock at noon, as he was looking through his glass, he spied it at a distance, and thought it was a sail, which he had a mind to make, being not much out of his course, in hopes of buying some biscuit, his own beginning to fall short. That upon coming nearer, and finding his error,

he sent out his long-boat to discover what I was; that his men came back in a fright, swearing they had seen a swimming house. That he laughed at their folly, and went himself in the boat, ordering his men to take a strong cable along with them. That the weather being calm, he rowed round me several times, observed my windows, and the wire lattices that defended them. That he discovered two staples upon one side, which was all of boards, without any passage for light. He then commanded his men to row up to that side, and fastening a cable to one of the staples, ordered them to tow my chest (as he called it) towards the ship. When it was there, he gave directions to fasten another cable to the ring fixed in the cover, and to raise up my chest with pulleys, which all the sailors were not able to do above two or three foot. He said they saw my stick and handkerchief thrust out of the hole, and concluded that some unhappy men must be shut up in the cavity. I asked whether he or the crew had seen any prodigious birds in the air about the time he first discovered me. To which he answered, that discoursing this matter with the sailors while I was asleep, one of them said he had observed three eagles flying towards the north, but remarked nothing of their being larger than the usual size, which I suppose must be imputed to the great height they were at; and he could not guess the reason of my question. I then asked the Captain how far he reckoned we might be from land; he said, by the best computation he could make, we were at least an hundred leagues. I assured him, that he must be mistaken by almost half, for I had not left the country from whence I came above two hours before I dropt into the sea. Whereupon he began again to think that my brain was disturbed, of which he gave me a hint, and advised me to go to bed in a cabin he had provided. I assured him I was well refreshed with his good entertainment and company, and as much in my senses as ever I was in my life. He then grew serious, and desired to ask me freely whether I were not troubled in mind by the consciousness of some enormous crime, for which I was punished at the command of some prince, by exposing me in that chest, as great criminals in other countries have been forced to sea in a leaky vessel without provisions; for although he should be sorry to have

taken so ill a man into his ship, yet he would engage his word to set me safe on shore in the first port where we arrived. He added, that his suspicions were much increased by some very absurd speeches I had delivered at first to the sailors, and afterwards to himself, in relation to my closet or chest, as well as by my odd looks and behaviour while I was at supper.

I begged his patience to hear me tell my story, which I faithfully did from the last time I left England to the moment he first discovered me. And as truth always forceth its way into rational minds, so this honest worthy gentleman, who had some tincture of learning, and very good sense, was immediately convinced of my candour and veracity. But further to confirm all I had said, I entreated him to give order that my cabinet should be brought, of which I had the key in my pocket (for he had already informed me how the seamen disposed of my closet). I opened it in his presence and showed him the small collection of rarities I made in the country from whence I had been so strangely delivered. There was the comb I had contrived out of the stumps of the King's beard, and another of the same materials, but fixed into a paring of her Majesty's thumbnail, which served for the back. There was a collection of needles and pins from a foot to half a yard long ; four waspstings, like joiner's tacks ; some combings of the Queen's hair ; a gold ring which one day she made me a present of in a most obliging manner, taking it from her little finger, and throwing it over my head like a collar. I desired the Captain would please to accept this ring in return of his civilities, which he absolutely refused. I showed him a corn that I had cut off with my own hand, from a maid of honour's toe ; it was about the bigness of a Kentish pippin, and grown so hard that when I returned to England, I got it hollowed into a cup, and set in silver. Lastly, I desired him to see the breeches I had then on, which were made of a mouse's skin.

I could force nothing on him but a footman's tooth, which I observed him to examine with great curiosity, and found he had a fancy for it. He received it with abundance of thanks, more than such a trifle could deserve. It was drawn by an unskilful surgeon, in a mistake, from one of Glumdalclitch's

men, who was afflicted with the tooth-ache, but it was as sound as any in his head. I got it cleaned, and put it into my cabinet. It was about a foot long, and four inches in diameter.

The Captain was very well satisfied with this plain relation I had given him, and said he hoped when we returned to England I would oblige the world by putting it in paper and making it public. My answer was that I thought we were already overstocked with books of travels; that nothing could now pass which was not extraordinary; wherein I doubted some authors less consulted truth than their own vanity, or interest, or the diversion of ignorant readers. That my story could contain little besides common events, without those ornamental descriptions of strange plants, trees, birds, and other animals, or of the barbarous customs and idolatry of savage people, with which most writers abound. However, I thanked him for his good opinion, and promised to take the matter into my thoughts.

He said he wondered at one thing very much, which was, to hear me speak so loud, asking me whether the King or Queen of that country were thick of hearing. I told him it was what I had been used to for above two years past, and that I admired as much at the voices of him and his men, who seemed to me only to whisper, and yet I could hear them well enough. But when I spoke in that country, it was like a man talking in the street to another looking out from the top of a steeple, unless when I was placed on a table, or held in any person's hand. I told him, I had likewise observed another thing, that when I first got into the ship, and the sailors stood all about me, I thought they were the most little contemptible creatures I had ever beheld. For indeed while I was in that prince's country, I could never endure to look in a glass after my eyes had been accustomed to such prodigious objects, because the comparison gave me so despicable a conceit of myself. The Captain said that while we were at supper he observed me to look at every thing with a sort of wonder, and that I often seemed hardly able to contain my laughter, which he knew not well how to take, but imputed it to some disorder in my brain. I answered, it was very true; and I wondered how I could forbear, when I saw his dishes of the size of a silver three-pence, a leg of pork hardly a mouthful,

a cup not so big as a nut-shell; and so I went on, describing the rest of his household-stuff and provisions after the same manner. For, although the Queen had ordered a little equipage of all things necessary for me while I was in her service, yet my ideas were wholly taken up with what I saw on every side of me, and I winked at my own littleness as people do at their own faults. The Captain understood my raillery very well, and merrily replied with the old English proverb, that he doubted my eyes were bigger than my belly, for he did not observe my stomach so good, although I had fasted all day; and continuing in his mirth, protested he would have gladly given an hundred pounds to have seen my closet in the eagle's bill, and afterwards in its fall from so great an height into the sea; which would certainly have been a most astonishing object, worthy to have the description of it transmitted to future ages: and the comparison of Phaeton was so obvious, that he could not forbear applying it, although I did not much admire the conceit.

The Captain having been at Tonquin, was in his return to England driven north-eastward to the latitude of 44 degrees, and of longitude 143. But meeting a trade-wind two days after I came on board him, we sailed southward a long time, and coasting New Holland kept our course west-south-west, and then south-south-west till we doubled the Cape of Good Hope. Our voyage was very prosperous, but I shall not trouble the reader with a journal of it. The Captain called in at one or two ports, and sent in his long-boat for provisions and fresh water, but I never went out of the ship till we came into the Downs, which was on the third day of June, 1706, about nine months after my escape. I offered to leave my goods in security for payment of my freight; but the Captain protested he would not receive one farthing. We took kind leave of each other, and I made him promise he would come to see me at my house in Redriff. I hired a horse and guide for five shillings, which I borrowed of the Captain.

As I was on the road, observing the littleness of the houses, the trees, the cattle, and the people, I began to think myself in Lilliput. I was afraid of trampling on every traveller I met, and often called aloud to have them stand out of the way,

so that I had like to have gotten one or two broken heads for my impertinence.

When I came to my own house, for which I was forced to enquire, one of the servants opening the door, I bent down to go in (like a goose under a gate) for fear of striking my head. My wife ran out to embrace me, but I stooped lower than her knees, thinking she could otherwise never be able to reach my mouth. My daughter kneeled to ask my blessing, but I could not see her till she arose, having been so long used to stand with my head and eyes erect to above sixty foot; and then I went to take her up with one hand, by the waist. I looked down upon the servants and one or two friends who were in the house, as if they had been pigmies, and I a giant. I told my wife, she had been too thrifty, for I found she had starved herself and her daughter to nothing. In short, I behaved myself so unaccountably, that they were all of the Captain's opinion when he first saw me, and concluded I had lost my wits. This I mention as an instance of the great power of habit and prejudice.

In a little time I and my family and friends came to a right understanding: but my wife protested I should never go to sea any more; although my evil destiny so ordered that she had not power to hinder me, as the reader may know hereafter. In the mean time I here conclude the second part of my unfortunate voyages.

THE END OF THE SECOND PART.

NOTES

Lack of space here forbids any attempt to *explain* topical allusions. They are merely indicated, and the student must refer to the history of the period.

Omissions, for the most part very short, have been made from the text where the original was not in modern taste. They occur on p. 19, l. 29, after 'right'; 23, 15, theatre; 36, 16, horse; 48, 28, me; 52, 26, ours; 60, 18, I; 62, 26, crimes; 63, 32, you; 83, 20, me; 85, 12, scabbard; 104, 3, behold; 109, 32, me.

P. 1. This title page, with those on pp. 11 and 73, and the maps on pp. 12 and 74, are reproduced in facsimile from the 1727 edition.

P. 3. *A Letter.* The object of this letter is threefold: to mystify the public and so conceal the true authorship; to give a greater appearance of truth to the following narrative, and to protest against the liberties Motte had taken with the text. With these kept in mind, the student will be able to appreciate what an admirable piece of work it is.

l. 5. *uncorrect.* Un- as a negative prefix was much more common in Swift's time than now, when it is largely replaced by in-.

l. 8. *Dampier*, William (1652–1715), a freebooter and explorer, who published in 1697 his *Voyage Round the Terrestrial Globe*.

l. 13. *Paragraph.* Motte had substituted this in praise of Anne instead of a paragraph in which a chief Minister of State is described as one who 'made use of no other passions but a violent desire of wealth, power and titles.'

ll. 17–18. *any . . . composition.* In Houyhnhnmland, where Gulliver then was, the horses were the rational beings and the men mere brutes.

l. 23. *say . . . not.* The Houyhnhnms were so virtuous that they had no conception of a lie, and therefore no word to express it. This is the phrase by which Gulliver's master there overcame the difficulty.

l. 24. *Academy.* In Book III of the Travels.

P. 4, l. 4. *Yahoos.* The name given to the brute slaves in the country where horses were the masters. The Yahoos repre-

sented for Swift men. Yahoo is therefore a term of contempt for man.

l. 35. *cotton*, from which paper was made.

P. 5, l. 5. *libels*. Lat. *libellus*, a little book. Not used in the modern sense, but with the meaning of lampoon.

l. 25. *nor now in use*. Not unlikely, for Swift's authority on sea terms seems to have been Sturmey's *Compleat Mariner*, published in 1669.

P. 6, l. 4. *Brobdingrag*. There is genius in this little touch, which 'strikes every reader with conviction.'

l. 36. *April* 2, 1727. This letter was really written for the Dublin 1735 edition.

P. 7, l. 1. *Publisher*, means editor, not publisher in the modern sense.

l. 2. *Lemuel*. Evidently the Gullivers were Puritans, for his parents must have found this name in Proverbs xxxi.

ll. 20–24. Swift must have enjoyed writing these lines.

l. 24. *spoke*, for 'spoken.' The Elizabethans often dropped many old endings, among them the *-en* of past participles. This was later restored, but the shorter form was for long in common use.

l. 32. *variations*, the deviations of the magnetic needle in various places from the true north.

bearings, compass readings.

P. 8, l. 13. *Sympson*. Richard Sympson is, of course, as apocryphal as Lemuel Gulliver.

PART I.—A VOYAGE TO LILLIPUT

It is impossible in the notes to indicate the successive strokes of Swift's humour, attractive and telling though they are. Only specimen ones can be mentioned, and, in general, the student must rely upon cultivating the outlook of Moore in the poem quoted on the next page.

As for the political satire, in general Lilliput is England, the Emperor George I, the Empress Queen Anne and Blefuscu France. Sometimes Gulliver is Swift himself, and sometimes Bolingbroke. The student should read the politics of Queen Anne and George I in some sound textbook as a preparation for working out Swift's allusions.

Note the extreme skill shown in the introductory statements. Swift's object is to make his narrative convincing, and the persuasive effect of the exactness of his details is marvellous: 2 years and 7 months, part of a house, four hundred pounds for a portion.

Chapter I

No better comment can be made on Chapter I than an extract from Moore's poem to Sir Hudson Lowe :

As thou art fond of persecutions,
Perhaps thou'st read or heard repeated,
How Captain Gulliver was treated,
When thrown among the Lilliputians.

They tied him down—these little men did—
And having valiantly ascended
Upon the Mighty Man's protuberance
They did so strut !—upon my soul,
It must have been extremely droll
To see their pigmy pride's exuberance.

And how the doughty mannikins
Amus'd themselves with sticking pins
And needles in the great man's breeches,
And how some *very* little things,
That pass'd for Lords, on scaffoldings
Got up, and worried him with speeches.

P. 13, l. 9. *Emanuel.* Emanuel was a Puritan college. Vide p. 7, l. 2, note.

l. 14. *surgeon.* Surgery was still a craft rather than a profession. The word itself means 'handworking.' Freemen of the guild of barber-surgeons trained apprentices just as did the Mercers, Lorimers, etc.

l. 25. *Leyden*, the famous Dutch University, whose reputation at this time for science and medicine was very great.

l. 29. *Levant*, the Eastern part of the Mediterranean.

P. 14, l. 3. *Jury*, now spelt Jewry. Originally the quarter where Jews were obliged to live. O.Fr. *juerie.*

l. 4. *Mrs.*, a title originally given to all women and girls, no matter how young, who were of gentle birth ; then it was gradually extended to include those of humbler rank ; finally it was restricted to those above 16 years of age, and Miss introduced for those younger. This last stage was reached in Swift's time.

l. 24. *Wapping*, on the north bank of the Thames, below the

Tower of London; has a large seafaring population. In Swift's time it was a much more desirable place of residence than now.

l. 35. *Van Diemen's Land.* Swift pitched on a safe part of the world. In his time practically nothing was known of the South Pacific Ocean or of the Australian Continent. The account of Tasman, who discovered Van Diemen's Land in 1633, is vague in the extreme.

observation, observing the altitude of the sun with a quadrant.

P. 15, l. 5. *made a shift to*, contrived to, managed to.

l. 10. *flurry*, squall of wind.

l. 26. *very short*, being like everything else, one-twelfth of the normal size.

l. 29. *I . . . rise.* This incident was perhaps suggested by a passage in . . . the Greek writer Philostratus . . . *c.* A.D. 200, in which he describes a picture of Hercules bound and assailed by the Pygmies.—*Mr. A. B. Gough.*

l. 33. *ligatures*, bands.

l. 35. *offended*, hurt by striking upon. This word comes indirectly from Lat. *offendere*, to strike against.

P. 16, l. 23. *accent.* This is not our use of the word; we should say, rather loosely, 'tone'; the meaning is 'timbre.'

l. 34. *buff jerkin*, a tunic of ox- or buffalo-hide. Buff is from Fr. *buffle*, buffalo, whose hide is yellow, whence 'buff' as a colour.

P. 17, l. 7. *a stage.* Probably a hit at the Whigs, who started the habit of making election speeches from hustings. This account of pygmy oratory is highly comic.

P. 18, l. 14. *half a pint.* Observing the exact proportions, it should have held $\frac{504}{1728}$ of a pint.

l. 32. *with . . . magnificence.* The student must imagine the Dean writing. He was habitually stern in countenance, with light-blue, slightly prominent eyes, but when he wrote a sentence such as this surely his features relaxed.

P. 19, l. 1. *small.* Not down by the ankle, but immediately below the knee.

l. 4. *Signet Royal.* Many phrases of Swift's time, and some modern ones, betray their French origin by having the adjective after the noun. We still say 'blood royal' and 'sign manual.'

l. 5. *without . . . anger.* Cf. Moore's poem.

ll. 9–10. *but . . . purposes*, i.e. but could not make them understand me.

l. 36. *sleepy*. This word is still given in dictionaries with the meaning, as here, 'causing to sleep,' in addition to the usual 'disposed to sleep.'

P. 20, l. 1. *express*. The quickest method of transmitting news at this time was by a messenger on horseback. The superscription often contained instructions to the 'express'—as 'Haste, haste, post haste,' taken from a letter of the first Earl of Orrery.

l. 16. Swift had no reverence for mathematics, but thought with Goldsmith that they did not require the highest order of intellect.

l. 21. *nine foot long*. If this be multiplied by twelve we see how small were the ships of Swift's time compared with those of ours.

P. 21, l. 3. *four inches and a half*. The stature of horses has been increased a good deal since Swift's day by skilled breeding.

l. 13. *which . . . straw*. This and the 'unperceived' of the next line not only make the reader smile, but remind him of the scale of Lilliput.

l. 28. *zeal*, religious fervour.

l. 36. *fourscore . . . chains*. In the *Tale of a Tub*, written many years previously, Swift says, 'Fourscore and eleven pamphlets have I written . . . for the service of six and thirty factions.' This correspondence has given rise to much speculation, of which nothing has come.

Chapter II

The Inventory contained in this chapter is a most brilliant piece of work. In spite of his prejudice against Swift, Johnson, says Boswell, 'allowed very great merit to the inventory of the articles found in the pocket of the "man mountain," particularly the description of his watch.'

The Emperor and his action are a commentary on George I and his character. Although the physical portrait is purposely made unlike, certain traits which George I undoubtedly possessed are pointed out. The Notes indicate them as they occur.

P. 23, l. 8. *entertaining*, like 'diverting,' in the eighteenth century meant 'interesting,' not 'amusing.'

l. 12. *stang*, a rod, pole or perch, $16\frac{1}{2}$ feet.

P. 24, ll. 3–4. Macaulay, who admits that Swift owes very little to his predecessors, suggests that he took the hint for this from some Latin lines by Addison.

The description, however, is so natural that the reminiscence seems hardly probable. Note the irony of the last clause.

l. 6. *Austrian.* The Hapsburgs of Austria had a heavy underlip derived from the Dukes of Burgundy, who were the ancestors of Charles V.

l. 17. *Asiatic.* It appears that George had two Turkish pages, who exercised some influence over him. There may be a reference.

l. 24. *magnificently clad.* The dress of the upper classes was absurdly elaborate at this time.

ll. 24–26. *so . . . silver.* This is a pretty fancy.

P. 25, ll. 15–16. Swift despised courts and courtiers' methods, and no doubt the writing of this clause gave him genuine satisfaction.

P. 26, ll. 9–10. *and . . . kingdom.* This is slightly ungrammatical, a thing not unknown in Swift. He means 'which would probably spread thence through the whole kingdom,' and even so he is ambiguous.

ll. 14–15. George I was reasonably just, and would always reward service where possible.

l. 22. *upon his own demesnes.* His revenue was derived from the crown lands, not from taxation. A demesne is an estate of which the owner is in actual occupation.

l. 38. *in some sort*, after a fashion.

P. 27, l. 32. *and is.* Bad grammar again. In the first clause inventory is Acc., in the second Nom. The simplest correction is to read 'and it is word,' etc.

l. 34. For Dr. Johnson's opinion of this inventory see head note to this chapter. The document is a skit on the reports of the Whig committee appointed by Walpole to enquire into supposed Jacobite plots. Someone remarked that this committee 'found nothing suspicious but what they could not understand; and that, as they understood nothing, they suspected everything.' In the same way the Lilliputians thought Gulliver's watch might be his god, etc.

Imprimis, in the first place. A legal phrase from Lat. *in primis.*

l. 37. *cloth*, Gulliver's handkerchief.

P. 28, l. 1. *chest*, snuffbox.

l. 12. *palisados*, palisade, or fence made of pales; a corrupt tion of the Spanish 'palizada.'

l. 18. *pillar of iron*, pocket pistol.

l. 24. *white and red metal.* In Swift's day only halfpennies and farthings were of copper; pennies were made of silver.

7

P. 29, l. 4. *globe.* Watches used to be made like a sphere flattened on one side. The writer remembers several farm labourers who used to carry old watches of this type. They were somewhat irreverently called 'turnips,' probably on account of their shape.

l. 9. Try to imagine what the ticking of the watch must have sounded like to a Lilliputian. Cf. p. 30, ll. 31–36.

P. 30, l. 1. *scimitar.* A Turkish or Persian curved sword. The word is perhaps derived from Persian 'shim-shir,' lion's claw. In Swift's day, every merchantman and its crew were armed. The reader will understand why if he cares to read Dampier's *Voyage Round the Terrestrial Globe.* One supposes, however, that the usual weapon was a cutlass, not a scimitar.

l. 5. *but . . . it.* This picture of a man being threatened by elaborate warlike preparations which are so minute that he does not even notice them, is one of the most successful of Swift's side hits. Swift probably wishes to intimate that the fuss Walpole was making about Jacobite plots was as absurd as the Lilliputians' demonstration; in fact, the persons concerned were so occupied in loyal contemplation of George I that they did not even perceive the machinations of the Whigs.

P. 31, ll. 4–6. *My . . . stores.* Persons suspected by the Whigs of leanings to Jacobitism and Popery were subjected to search, and desired to hand over to the military all suspicious articles. One humorist, wearied by constant requisitions to surrender his firearms, sent his poker, tongs and shovel to the arsenal, and took a receipt for them from the officer in command.

l. 9. *perspective,* telescope. The word, now obsolete in this sense, came from Lat. *perspicĕre,* to see through.

Chapter III

The subject which always roused Swift's fiercest anger was the prevalence of corruption in Court circles. Walpole's cynical motto, 'Every man has his price,' is well known, and he acted up to it. Added to this genuine hatred of hypocrisy was Swift's personal hatred of Walpole. The first part of this chapter, therefore, is a telling satire on Court methods.

P. 32, l. 29. A hit at the fact that the last things which counted as qualifications for office were ability and honesty; a capacity for backstair intrigue was the surest way to it.

l. 32. *Flimnap,* Sir Robert Walpole.

P. 33, ll. 16–18. Walpole had to resign in 1717, but regained office

in 1721, through the influence of the Duchess of Kendal, to whom the 'cushion' probably makes reference.

l. 22. *threads*, the orders of knighthood. Blue is the colour of the Order of the Garter, founded *c.* 1348; green, of the Order of the Thistle, 1687; red, of the Order of the Bath, founded at Walpole's suggestion in 1725 to reward loyalty to the House of Hanover. When this last was founded Swift wrote some verses containing the germ of p. 33, ll. 30 sqq.

> 'And he who'll leap over a stick for the King,
> Is best qualified for a dog in a string.'

ll. 30–31. *both . . . horizon*, a distinctly clumsy way of saying 'horizontally.'

P. 34, l. 11. *of . . . high.* Swift means either 'of a height of two foot' or 'two foot high,' but has actually written part of each.

foot. Formerly after a numeral in phrases of measure the singular was used instead of the plural, but this is now becoming dialectal, except in a few words like dozen, score, etc.

ll. 16 sqq. This description is most amusingly inaccurate. However, the student can easily work out what is intended, if he remembers that the sticks are all 6 inches too short, and that 'parallel' in l. 18 means 'horizontally.'

l. 31. *discovered*, exhibited.

P. 35, l. 13. *these.* Ungrammatical even in Swift's time, but ancient. The original phrase was 'these kind feats,' 'kind' being genitive plural. This history explains the tendency some of us still have to say 'these' instead of 'this' in such phrases.

P. 36, l. 10. *Colossus.* The reference to Julius Cæsar, I. ii. 135, is inevitable, and Shakespeare's lines are a perfect comment on this scene. The whole incident is a satire on George I's fondness for military show.

l. 14. *in a breast.* This phrase was a variant of 'on a breast' or 'of a breast,' which has now been shortened to 'abreast.'

l. 25. *complexion*, temperament, as frequently in Shakespeare. See my edition of *Coriolanus* in this series, II. i. 195 and note.

l. 31. *demanded*, required, asked. Cf. Fr. *demander*.

P. 37, l. 6. *twelve miles.* Applying the scale, we find the Empire very small indeed, which makes Ully Gue's titles even more ridiculous.

P. 38, l. 31. *quadrant.* An arc of 90° (Lat. *quadrans*) with a pivoted telescope attached; used to obtain the angle of height of objects, especially of the sun at sea.

Chapter IV

The High-Heels and Low-Heels in this chapter are the Tories and Whigs, who were respectively the High Church and Low Church parties, the Low Church or Whigs being in power. The Heir to the Crown was George, Prince of Wales, afterwards George II, who quarrelled violently with his father's ministers, but took up a midway attitude which left it doubtful which party he would support when he became king.

The Big-Endians and the Little-Endians are the same two parties, in their character of Jacobites and Hanoverians. Blefuscu is France, where the Jacobites found refuge and help.

P. 39, l. 15. *sideling*. The O.E. suffix *-lunga* gave -ling and -long, 'sideling' and 'sidelong.' The first has now disappeared. But before this happened it came to be regarded as a present participle because it ended in -ing, and a verb was formed from it, 'sidle.'

l. 31. Here either a verb should be inserted or the punctuation altered.

P. 40, ll. 31–33. This is supposed to allude to Queen Anne.

ll. 34 sqq. Plausible detail.

P. 41, ll. 12–14. Cf. Introduction, p. xlv.

l. 31. George I was a Lutheran, and therefore lower even than the Low Church Whigs.

ll. 37 sqq. See head note to this chapter. Sir Walter Scott, on the authority of Mrs. Howard, says the Prince laughed heartily at this passage.

P. 42, l. 2. *intestine*, internal.

l. 3. *Island of Blefuscu*. France was probably of set purpose represented as an island.

l. 15. Thirty-six years before 1725 William III declared war upon France.

l. 26. *and . . . crown*. Probably James II.

l. 39. *Alcoran*, Koran, the Mohammedan Bible.

P. 43, l. 6. See head note to this chapter.

l. 11. *capital ships*, ships of the line, men of war.

Chapter V

The satire in the last chapter was in its nature particular, and applied to English domestic politics. Here it is more general, and suggests, by showing how ridiculous war appears on a pygmy scale, that war among larger beings is equally foolish.

As Hazlitt says, the incident of Gulliver carrying off the fleet is 'a mortifying stroke, aimed at national glory.'

P. 44, l. 12. *embargo*. An edict forbidding ships to leave a port. From a Spanish word, a cognate of Fr. *embarquement*, for which see my edition of *Coriolanus* in this series, I. x. 22 note.

P. 45, ll. 4–5. Note the change in number, an example of grammar being overcome by necessity.

l. 27. *receiving . . . hands*. The Blefuscudians could hardly miss such a mark. The conventional description of a bad shot as unable to hit a haystack is totally inadequate to this situation.

l. 37. *that*, as.

P. 46, l. 6. *expecting*, waiting for.

l. 18. *encomiums*, praises.

l. 23 sqq. Such dreams of subjugating France had some Englishmen when Marlborough was winning his great victories. Swift always showed a great aversion to war and the profession of arms.

P. 47, l. 2. *junto*, from Spanish *junta*, 'a council.' First applied in England to certain Whig leaders in William III's reign.

ll. 36–7. A reference to the impeachment of Bolingbroke, who was accused of having given, during the negotiations at Utrecht, information to the French ambassador in London. This was almost certainly true, but Bolingbroke was a friend of Swift, and Swift was very loyal to his friends.

l. 38. Gulliver means that even then his appreciation of the duplicity practised in courts was imperfect.

Chapter VI

Here Swift leaves politics, and satirises the manners and methods of education of his time. In doing so he makes more than one suggestion of value. But the most delightful section is the last—his vindication of the honour of a Lilliputian lady.

P. 49, l. 19. *pulling*, plucking; or perhaps 'drawing.'

l. 23. Dr. Waller says: 'This is one of the instances in the Travels which show the manner in which the mind of the narrator seems to conform to the dimensions of everything around him, and to think . . . according to the . . . standard . . . of the country in which he finds himself. With what solemnity Gulliver talks of those stately trees in the royal park, believing that he conveys an impressive idea of their altitude when he says that he could scarcely reach to the top of them.'

l. 24. *vegetables*: in the wide sense of 'plants.'

l. 31. *Cascagians*, a people quite imaginary.

l. 32. Note that the whole sting of this sentence is in its tail, a favourite trick with Swift.

The following is an extract from a letter written by Swift to Mrs. Howard: 'When I received your letter, I thought it the most unaccountable one I ever saw in my life, and was not able to comprehend three words of it together. The perverseness of your lines astonished me, which tended downwards to the right in one page, and upwards in the two others. This I thought impossible to be done by anyone who did not squint with both eyes, an infirmity I never observed in you.'

P. 50, l. 1. *They bury their dead.* 'Swift here satirizes crude and literal interpretation of Scripture. . . . It is popularly believed that the man buried on Leith Hill in Surrey chose this mode of burial, and for the same reason as the Lilliputians.'—*Mr. A. B. Gough.*

l. 36. *ran*, the past tense. It should be the past participle 'run.'

P. 51, l. 39. *public weal*, may mean 'the community,' or 'the common good.' From O.E. *wela*, well-being. *Vide* Shakespeare's *Coriolanus* in this series, II. i. 48, and note on 'wealsmen.'

P. 52, l. 9. *following laws.* 'The laws which follow would have been more suitable to the calm and philosophical character of the people of Brobdingnag than to the Lilliputians, whose court and manners are elsewhere represented as resembling what is ascribed by satirists to those of Europe.'—*Scott.*

ll. 12–18. Probably a reference to James I, who was very liberal to favourites, and who created the dignity of baronet so that he might obtain ready money by the sale of it.

l. 25. 'The idea seems to be borrowed from Cyrano Bergerac's *Voyage to the Moon*, where he finds a people with whom it was the rule that the fathers obeyed their children.'—*Scott.*

The above is given because this is one of the few instances in which it can be suggested that Swift borrowed from another writer. On this subject Dr. Johnson says: 'No writer can easily be found that has borrowed so little, or that in all his excellences and all his defects has so well maintained his claim to be considered as original.' See also p. 24, ll. 3–4, note.

ll. 34 sqq. This system of rearing children has been advocated at intervals throughout the centuries from Plato to the present time. So far as Swift is concerned it must be remembered that he had no home life (see *Life* in this volume), and therefore could not perhaps appreciate its advantages.

P. 53, l. 28. *pension*, payment due at stated intervals. The meaning now has been narrowed, and one must add to the definition 'for services previously rendered.'

P. 54, l. 38. In Swift's day no one dreamed of general education for the working people.

P. 55, l. 8. *having . . . turned*, having a natural turn for handwork.

l. 16. *foot*. Cf. p. 34, l. 11 and note.

l. 18. *strong*. Cf. note on p. 49, l. 23.

P. 56, l. 9. *sirloin*, strictly 'surloin,' from Fr. *surlonge*, 'upper loin.'

l. 10. *bits*, bites, but Swift has the proper form. 'To make three bites of a thing' means to make three bits of it, not to 'bite three times.'

l. 15. *knife*. Some of Swift's correspondence makes it quite clear that he regarded knives and forks as interchangeable for table purposes.

l. 20. *'em*. This form of 'them' is still given in any dictionary of reasonable size.

l. 26. *admiration*, wonder, not the modern meaning.

ll. 32–33. *he . . . discount*. If he borrowed £1,000 he paid interest on the full amount, but actually received less.

ll. 33–34. *exchequer . . . par*. Government stock was down to 91 at least.

l. 36. *spangle*, a small disc used as an ornament on clothes.

P. 58, l. 2. *were*. The subjunctive after 'although' here is obviously wrong. It is a fact that he was undeceived. And on one occasion Swift said of Pope: 'I could never get the blockhead to study his grammar!'

Chapter VII

Here Swift pleads strongly the case of his friend Bolingbroke. One of the best traits of Swift's character was his intense loyalty to personal friends. Throughout this chapter Gulliver is Bolingbroke, who was impeached by the Whig lords and fled to France.

P. 59, l. 8. *by the meanness of my condition*, by reason of my low rank.

ll. 29–31. Such a secret committee, with Walpole as chairman, investigated the conduct of the Tory leaders, and it was on its findings that they were impeached.

P. 60, l. 1. The office of Lord High Admiral was abolished in 1703, as was that of Lord High Treasurer (p. 56) in 1714. Each was replaced by a commission.

l. 18. *Article I*. The Tory lords left our allies without aid,

and so permitted the French to retrieve their losses. Swift defends the action on high moral grounds.

ll. 31 sqq. *Articles II and III.* Bolingbroke was accused of having given information to Louis' agents, and of having visited France for that purpose.

P. 61, ll. 24–6. Hercules died through putting on a poisoned garment. See Lempriere's *Classical Dictionary*. Swift may have remembered the fact and turned it to account in this sentence.

l. 29. *brought off*, over-persuaded.

P. 62, l. 7. *only . . . eyes.* Some Whigs suggested that instead of being accused of high treason, the penalty for which was death, Bolingbroke and Oxford should be charged with high misdemeanours, which if proved would mean that their estates and titles would be forfeited.

ll. 30. *overt*, open. Cf. Fr. *ouvert.*

ll. 33–35. George I was notably parsimonious.

l. 39. *fowl.* The plural of 'fowl' is now 'fowls,' the old form being preserved only in certain compounds.

P. 63, l. 30. *Empress.* Queen Anne was always an enemy of Swift; it was owing to her dislike of him that he never obtained a bishopric. See *Life* in this volume, pp. xiii and xvii.

P. 64, l. 24. *I . . . enemies.* Commentators consider that Swift here would have us believe that Bolingbroke intended at first to stand his trial, but afterwards decided that, owing to the violence and party spirit of the Whigs, he would get no fair hearing. Bolingbroke himself says, in a letter written from Dover, 'Had there been the least reason to hope for a fair and open trial, after having been already prejudged unheard by two Houses of Parliament, I should not have declined the strictest examination.' It is very possible that Swift believed this, for it is certain that he was unacquainted with much of the backstair intrigue of the Harley administration, but Bolingbroke must have known that his conduct of affairs would not bear examination.

l. 37. *gratitude of courtiers*, which is ingratitude. This phrase is ably supported by the bitter irony of p. 65, ll. 2–9. There he suggests that had he known the cruelty of which courts are capable he would have been glad to get off with so light punishments as blinding and starvation.

P. 65, l. 14. *pursuant to*, in accordance with.

l. 19. *between . . . swimming*, sometimes wading and sometimes swimming; or, half wading and half swimming, i.e. with my feet just touching the bottom. The first is more probable.

because we know there were parts when he could not touch the bottom. See pp. 44 and 45.

CHAPTER VIII

The story is now almost free from political allegory, and the account of Gulliver's discovery of the boat, his escape and his return to England is very skilfully managed. In particular is Swift happy in his references to the cattle. The allusions to the rat-hole, to the bowling green and to the woollen trade are inimitable.

P. 67, l. 7. *wading . . . yards.* Swift never forgets his scale of dimensions.

P. 67, l. 29 – p. 68, l. 7. This is a remarkably long sentence for Swift.

P. 68, l. 6. *engines*, probably windlasses and shears.

l. 9. One feels tempted to insert a comma after 'under,' and to elide that after 'paddles.'

l. 18. Sheridan, whose father was Swift's close friend during his latter years, and who was the ancestor of the famous Sheridan, says that 'not to have heard' here is ungrammatical, and should be 'at not having heard.' Surely it is not ungrammatical, merely a little uncommon.

l. 27. *cabal*, from 'cabbala,' the name of a secret doctrine of the Jews. Used in England to mean a political coterie in Charles II's reign, because the initials of the five ministers in power at a certain period, some of whom signed a secret treaty of alliance with France, happened to form the word 'cabal.'

l. 33. This touch about the loss of the title is exquisite.

P. 70, l. 28. *advanced forward.* This type of redundancy is not unknown in modern English, although it is now incorrect.

lee-side, under the wind, so that he had an off-shore breeze.

l. 31. Supply 'that' after 'found.' Gulliver awoke during the night.

l. 37. The geography of these seas was very vague in Swift's day. Possibly Swift was referring to the west coast of Australia, which had been visited by the Dutch and Dampier.

P. 71, l. 5. *ancient*, an extraordinary corruption of 'ensign,' from the Latin *insigne*.

l. 8. *pledges*, his wife and family.

ll. 10–11. *but . . . colours.* Imagine the curl of the Dean's lip as he wrote this.

l. 14. *North and South Seas.* The North Sea means the North

Pacific; the South Sea would probably be the seas in the neighbourhood of Java.

l. 33. The Downs is a roadstead off the Kent coast, opposite the North Downs.

l. 35. See head note. Swift maintains his supply of plausible detail to the very last.

P. 72, l. 10. The woollen trade occupied Swift's attention a good deal, because the Government imposed protective duties in favour of the English, which did much harm to the Irish industry.

l. 18. All business houses used to be known by signs.

l. 22. *towardly*, oncoming, promising.

l. 26. *Surat*, a seaport of India, at the mouth of the Tapti. The first factory of the English East Indian Company was established there.

PART II.—A VOYAGE TO BROBDINGNAG

The great contrast between Book I and Book II has given rise to much comment. Dr. Waller says: 'Hitherto we have been inspecting humanity, as it were, through a telescope reversed, in which every object appears diminished; we are now to use the instrument the other way, and looking through the smaller end, see all things magnified.' Lord Orrery uses another metaphor: 'The inhabitants of Lilliput are represented as if reflected from a convex mirror, by which every object is reduced to a despicable minuteness: the inhabitants of Brobdingnag, by a contrary mirror, are enlarged to a shocking deformity. In Lilliput we behold a set of puny insects, or animalcules, in human shape, ridiculously engaged in affairs on importance: in Brobdingnag the monsters of enormous size are employed in trifles.' In my opinion both of these writers miss a very important point. In emphasising the differences between the two Books they overlook their essential unity. See Introduction, p. xliv, where the matter is discussed.

So far as the character of the satire is concerned, nothing could be more just than the following comments by Sir Walter Scott: 'In the Voyage to Brobdingnag, the satire is of a more general character; nor is it easy to trace any particular reference to the political events or statesmen of the period. It merely exhibits human actions and sentiments as they might appear in the apprehension of beings or immense strength, and, at the same time of a cold, reflecting and philosophical character. The monarch of these sons of Anak is designed to embody Swift's ideas of a patriot king, indifferent to

what was curious, and cold to what was beautiful, feeling only interest in that which was connected with general utility and the public weal. To such a prince the intrigues, scandals and stratagems of a European court are represented as equally odious in their origin and contemptible in their progress.'

P. 90, *the Map.* In considering whether the map is accurate it should be remembered that Brobdingnag was six thousand miles long, and anything from three to five thousand in breadth.

Chapter I

The mass of sea terms which Swift uses in describing the storm are a satire on such writers as Dampier, who describe in great detail the handling of their vessels. Swift at the end of the chapter openly gibes at the tediousness of writers of books of travel.

As the inhabitants of Lilliput were one-twelfth of human stature, those of Brobdingnag were twelve times as tall as ordinary people, but this is not at first apparent. The first impression given is a vague idea of hugeness. As Professor de Morgan says: 'Swift has marked with so much art the arithmetical questions that arise, that the interest is well preserved. The first definite indication of the Brobdingnagian stature is conveyed in the description of a monster 'who took about ten yards at each stride.' The average human step is thirty inches, the twelfth part of ten yards.

P. 75, l. 19. *Straits of Madagascar*, Mozambique Channel. 'Strait' really means 'narrow,' as in 'the strait and narrow way.'

l. 21. *the winds.* The following lines sound like a description of the North-West Monsoon.

l. 26. *Molucca Islands.* A reference to a map will show that they had been blown off their course to a most astonishing degree, even if the storm did blow for twenty days together.

P. 76, l. 2. *southern monsoon.* In the Malay Archipelago the monsoon blows directly from the south.

l. 3. *overblow*, blow harder.

sprit-sail, a square sail that was set below the bowsprit. It is no longer used.

l. 4. *stood . . . fore-sail*, stood by ready to take in the fore-sail.

l. 5. *looked*, made certain. Ships' guns were liable to get adrift in bad weather, and do much damage.

ll. 6–7. *The ship . . . hulling.* The ship did not hold close on to the wind; i.e. either she carried a lee helm or the seas

would not permit it, so we thought it better running (spooning) before the sea, than heaving to (trying) or scudding under bare poles (hulling).

l. 8. *him*, it. There is a tendency in familiar language to bestow gender on inanimate things. One often hears the ejaculation 'Got him!' when the speaker means 'Got *it*!' A sailor, an engine-driver and a chauffeur all frequently refer to their respective vehicles as 'she.'

fore-sheet, the rope which controls the foot of the fore-sail.

ll. 8–9. *a weather*. The weather side is that from which the wind is coming. This would keep the ship's head more or less west or east, and so counteract to some extent the northern drift.

l. 9. *wore*, steered; a variant of 'veer' with a past tense wrongly formed on the analogy of 'wear.' This is not the only nautical example of a confusion of 'v' and 'w.' For instance, most Thames bargemen pronounce 'vang' as 'wang.'

l. 13. *the lanyard of the whipstaff*, a rope fastened to the tiller, on which men could pull if the steersman needed help. Lanyard is from Fr. *lanière*, a thong.

l. 17. *wholesomer*, steadier.

l. 19. *brought the ship to*, caused the fore-sail and rudder to act against each other, so as to bring the vessel to a standstill, clinging to the wind.

l. 22. *starboard*, is the right-hand side, from O.E. *stēorboard*, the steering side of the ship. The most ancient form of rudder was an oar or paddle thrust over one side of the vessel near the stern.

tacks, ropes controlling the lower corners of the fore and main courses. When it was desired to have the sails flattened, i.e. not set at right angles to the mast, the tacks were hauled in board, with the result that the courses swung round, provided the ropes holding the yards in position on the opposite side (weather braces and lifts) were slacked off.

l. 23. *we set in the lee-braces*. We hauled tight the lee-braces.

l. 24. *weather-bowlings*, generally spelt 'bowlines,' are ropes attached to the sides of the lower square sails and carried forward, so as to keep the sides of the sails taut.

ll. 25–6. *kept . . . lie*, kept her as close to the wind as possible. The above sea phraseology seems to have been partly obsolete even in Swift's time. On this point see p. 5, l. 25, and note. The question is discussed at length in *Notes and Queries*, Series 4, i. 223.

l. 35. *Great Tartary*. Swift presumably means the Pacific

coast of Siberia. But either 'north-west' in l. 34 is a slip for 'north-east,' or his geography was lamentably weak.

l. 38. *whether*, here a pronoun, meaning 'which.' It is now seldom found, but the phrase 'whether of the two' is still occasionally used.

P. 77, l. 14. *hollow*, at one time a common form of 'holla,' to cry aloud.

ll. 27 sqq. Note the successive strokes by which Swift impresses upon us the vastness of the inhabitants of this country.

P. 78, ll. 31 sqq. The Dean is making quite sure that we shall draw the comparison he desires with Lilliput.

P. 79, ll. 1–3. *for . . . bulk*. Is this true?

P. 80, l. 8. *lappet*, like 'lapel' is a diminutive of 'lap,' which means 'fold.'

l. 27. This incident of the purse of gold is highly comic.

P. 82, ll. 27–28. *I . . . work*. This is one of the most celebrated phrases in the *Travels*. Another almost equally good is on p. 83, ll. 9 and 10.

P. 85, ll. 26–7. See head note to this chapter.

Chapter II

Swift in this chapter satirises the immense credulity and passion for sight-seeing of the public of his day. There is plenty of contemporary evidence of this craze. Dr. Taylor says: 'Immense crowds assembled to see a man creep into a quart bottle, and when they discovered that they had been deceived, were near destroying the house in their rage.' Addison, in No. 271 of the *Spectator*, has a letter supposedly written to him by a showman, describing a dwarf man, woman and horse. The showman says: 'Knowing that you are very inquisitive after everything that is curious in nature, I will wait on you if you please in the dusk of the evening, with my *show* upon my back, which I carry about with me in a box, as only consisting of a man, a woman and an horse.' This is evidently intended to burlesque a prevailing folly. Goldsmith says: 'From the highest to the lowest the people seem fond of sights and monsters.'

P. 86, l. 7. *baby's*, doll's.

ll. 25–6. This would appear to be a satire on the pedantry of some writers of the day. 'Nanunculus' is invented for the occasion, although it is a possible form from Latin *nanus*, dwarf; 'Homunceletino' is an Italianate version of Lat. *homunculus*. '-kin' is a diminutive suffix, and 'mannikin' means therefore

'a little man'; its first meaning in English was 'an artist's lay figure.'

P. 88, l. 15. *pursuant to*, in accordance with.

l. 16. *box*. See head note, quotation from Addison. Is this a reminiscence of the *Spectator* days?

l. 18. *pillion*, a cushion fastened behind the saddle of a horse to accommodate a second rider.

l. 34. *could*, which could. Omission of the relative was very common in Swift's day.

P. 89, l. 13. At this period a 'fop' was not a person finicky as to dress, but a fool. 'Fopperies' therefore meant 'foolish tricks.'

l. 23. *pumpion*. This word is now superseded by 'pumpkin.'

l. 28. *vehicle*, means that by which anything is conveyed.

P. 90, ll. 9–10. Evidently therefore the Empire measured 6,000 miles one way.

l. 19. Swift keeps his scale in mind. When they are divided by twelve these figures are quite normal—a day's journey of 12 to 13 miles with an occasional detour of not more than 8 miles.

l. 36. *parts*, capabilities. The phrase 'a man of parts' was very common in Augustan times, and meant 'a man of ability.'

l. 39. *palisadoed*, fenced with pales. Cf. p. 28, l. 12 note.

P. 91, l. 9. *Sanson's Atlas*. Nicolas Sanson was a noted maker of maps in the seventeenth century, and lived at Abbeville in Picardy. His maps were published in folio, i.e. the pages would be at least 12 inches by 7.

Chapter III

At the time when the *Travels* were being written, Swift was not without hopes of being able to 'recommence courtier,' as Johnson puts it, by the help of Caroline of Anspach, wife of George, Prince of Wales. The pleasant portrait he gives of the Queen of Brobdingnag is therefore generally supposed to be a compliment to the Princess. And indeed she seems to have been worthy of the tribute, for she was a woman of parts, fond of intellectual pursuits, and a patroness, albeit a somewhat capricious one, of men of letters. She was also a noted beauty until she contracted smallpox.

'The King,' says Sir Walter Scott, 'is a patriot monarch, governing his people on the principles of reason and philanthropy; separated, by his situation and his subjects' immense superiority in physical force, from either the necessity or the temptation of war and conquest;

a stoic in appetite and ambition; holding everything of little importance, except what directly tended to the real benefit of his subjects. This vision, as vain and improbable as the size of the personage so gifted, is maintained with singular art through the whole section.' There seems little doubt, however, that 'this vision' represents Swift's ideal of a monarch.

P. 92, l. 9. *unsatiable.* See p. 3, l. 5 note.

l. 10. *stomach*, appetite.

l. 12. *as good a hand*, as good a bargain, i.e. sell for as much as possible.

l. 17. *beauty.* Because, as he was very small, his skin seemed to them very fair. See p. 83, ll. 20 sqq.

P. 93, l. 1. *moidores.* 'Moidore' is a corruption of the Portuguese *moeda d'auro*, lit. 'money of gold,' a gold coin worth between twenty and thirty shillings.

In working out this sum, remember that it is a question of volumes. 'The proportion' is therefore 1 to 1,728 (12 × 12 × 12). Also as gold was scarce, its value may be considered as roughly twice that it would have in England.

ll. 7–8. *to do it*, how to do it.

ll. 22–3. *price . . . for*, price which . . . for. It is a habit with us, and indeed was becoming so before Swift's day, to assert that prepositions may not be left hanging at the ends of sentences as here. Dryden laboriously went through all his prose works and altered such clauses to the form 'price for which he had sold me.' The gain of such alterations, if any, is small.

l. 31. *Phœnix*, a bird held sacred by the Egyptians. Only one existed at a time. It lived long, was finally burnt up on the altar of the sun, and from its ashes a successor rose. The word here means 'unique being.'

l. 36. *improprieties.* inaccuracies.

P. 94, l. 10. *wit and humour.* The meaning of these words is much restricted in modern times. 'Wit' now means verbal cleverness, whether spoken or written; and 'humour' is simply appreciation of the comic. In Augustan times 'wit' meant 'information' or 'knowledge,' though with regard to poetry it had a special meaning, which Johnson defines as 'a combination of dissimilar images, or discovery of occult resemblances in things apparently unlike.' This special meaning has given rise to the modern usage. 'Humour' in Swift's day was used in more than one way, but the underlying idea was 't

distinguishing trait of character.' Here it means 'wilfulness' or 'caprice,' a common Shakespearian use.

l. 11 *scrutore*, a garbled version of Fr. *escritoire*, a writing-desk.

l. 17. *be*. Cf. p. 58, l. 2 note.

l. 33. *and did*. Cf. p. 88, l. 34 note.

l. 36. *in . . . waiting* (whose turn it was to be), in attendance at court for a week.

l. 38. *nicety*, precision, exactness.

P. 95, l. 8. *insects*. Originally meant certain forms of life whose bodies are divided into segments, as spiders, etc., but during the seventeenth century its meaning was much extended.

l. 9. *evince*, prove.

l. 10. *virtuosi*. Singular *virtuoso*—an Italian word meaning one skilled in curiosities, natural or antique.

l. 17. *dwarf*. The habit of collecting and keeping dwarfs at their courts persisted among European princes from early times until the end of the eighteenth century. Then one supposes that they realised that dwarfs, however comical their littleness might be, were human, and the practice was abandoned.

l. 20. *lusus naturæ*, a freak of nature, a sport. *Lusus* is a noun formed from *ludo*, I play. This, compared with 'sport,' shows the same idea working out in the two languages.

l. 23. *occult causes*, causes which lie hidden. Swift is sneering at modern science, which was just developing in England, and which tries to provide an explanation of phenomena. As sometimes the theories produced explain nothing, Swift's gibe is so far justified. He prefers the old method which says that inexplicable things are due to hidden causes; in other words, frankly admits its inability to explain. It is a curious fact that Swift, whose mind was in many ways most practical, never perceived the immense importance of the scientific movement of his day

P. 96, ll. 19–21. Another grammatical tangle, which can easily be corrected.

l. 22. *nice*, 'highly accurate,' not the modern colloquial meaning 'pleasant.' Cf. 9. 94, l. 38.

l. 32. *made . . . to*. Cf. p. 15, ll. 4 and 5. Gulliver implies that the key was too large for him to carry conveniently, but, from Glumdalclitch's point of view, so small that she was liable to lose it.

P. 97, ll. 15–16. *weak stomach*, small appetite. Cf. p. 92, l. 10 note.
l. 18. *craunch*, crunch.

P. 98, ll. 1–21. There is a savagery in this irony which is here felt for the first time. It occurs again during the course of this Book, and in Parts III and IV is almost constantly present.
l. 9. *white staff*. Flimnap had the same sign of office. See p. 56, l. 23 and note on p. 60, l. 1.
l. 30. One cannot help wishing that Swift had inserted 'in the most courtly manner' after 'acting.'

P. 99, ll. 38 sqq. The most celebrated dwarf known in England was Jeffrey Hudson, who was at first in the service of the Duke of Buckingham in Charles I's reign. On an occasion when he was entertaining the King and Queen, the Duke had Hudson, who was only 18 inches high, put in a large dish with a crust on the top, and served up to Her Majesty. This incident may have suggested the episode of the marrow-bone to Swift.

P. 100, ll. 6–7. Swift cannot refrain from irony, even at the expense of Gulliver, his chief instrument for satire. Here he gives him a ridiculous touch of self-importance.
ll. 12–13. *Dunstable lark*. At this time an industry of Dunstable in Bedfordshire was to catch larks for the London market.

P. 101, l. 3. *I . . . them*. The dwarf Hudson once had a battle royal with a turkey-cock; at any rate Sir William Davenant wrote a poem celebrating the deed.
l. 10. *Gresham College*. Founded under the will of Sir Thomas Gresham, the builder of the Royal Exchange. He left his house in Bishopsgate Street and a sum of money to provide daily lectures. It was opened in 1597, and is now housed in Gresham Street.

Chapter IV

Swift gives up this chapter to a most artistic satire by imitation of contemporary books of travel.

P. 102, l. 16. The old geographers held the theory that every great mass of earth in the world must be counterpoised by another in order to preserve equilibrium.
17. *Tartary*. Used vaguely for Asia. Cf. p. 76, l. 35 and note.
ll. 21 sqq. Swift had a reason for introducing impassable mountains and sharp rocks in the sea. What was it?

P. 103, ll. 37–8. This may mean either a square the same in area as Westminster Hall, or one the sides of which equalled the

width of Westminster Hall, whose dimensions actually are 290 feet by 68 feet.

P. 104, ll. 11–12. *I should . . . them.* What is the point in making Gulliver express the wish to dissect, instead of, say, draw or paint ?

l. 32. *out of order*, unwell.

P. 105, ll. 9–12. *The . . . seen.* Does this sentence need correction ?

Chapter V

Having firmly fixed in his reader's mind the proportions of the Brobdingnagians as compared with Gulliver, Swift relates a number of adventures, which, given the scale, are highly natural, and, on account of it, very amusing. It is said that at this time Swift was on bad terms with the Fitzgerald family, and invented the adventure with the monkey in order to annoy them. See note on p. 111, l. 33.

P. 107, l. 13. *wit.* Here this word has the modern meaning. Cf. p. 94, l. 10 and note.

l. 28. *tennis balls.* The balls for the old game of tennis were heavier and more solid than those now in use.

on all four. The modern form is 'on all fours'; first used by Defoe in *Robinson Crusoe* (N.E.D.).

l. 30. *but so*, but was so.

l. 31. *in*, within, i.e. for the space of.

P. 108, l. 2. *near eighteen hundred times.* To be exact, 1,728 times.

l. 3. We should say 'so curious as to,' etc.

l. 36. *stoop.* This was the technical term in falconry for 'swoop.'

l. 37. *espalier*, a frame on which fruit-trees are trained.

P. 109, l. 3. *broke . . . shin*, 'barked my right shin.'

l. 10. *security.* This word now means 'safety.' It was formerly used in the Latin sense *securitas*, unconcern. The meaning has shifted from the effect to the cause.

l. 34. In Swift's time it was a common diversion to make up parties to see executions. The practice has its counterpart even to-day. Executions were held in public until the latter half of the last century.

P. 110, l. 6. *jet d'eau at Versailles.* The Enceladus fountain in the gardens of this palace plays to a height of 75 feet.

l. 8. *were.* Cf. p. 58, l. 2 note.

l. 22. *joiner.* This word is still used in the building trade for 'carpenter.'

P. 111. l. 6. *hung . . . dry.* See Introduction, p. xxxix.

l. 13. *corking-pin.* 'A pin of the largest size.'—*Johnson.*

l. 14. *stomacher*, an ornamental covering formerly worn by women on the breast.

ll. 19–20. *so careless to let.* Cf. p. 108, l. 3 and note.

l. 33. Dr. Waller quotes in full a legend which purports to explain why a monkey is part of the Fitzgerald arms, and of which Swift took advantage for the purpose of venting his spleen upon that family. After relating how the Geraldines were killed off in a battle it continues: 'and now there remained but an infant, one year old. . . . The nurse, who had heard the dismal tidings at Tralee, ran about here and there, distraught with grief, and left the cradle of the young Geraldine without a watcher. Thereupon an ape (which was kept for amusement's sake) came and raised the infant out of the cradle, and carried him to the top of the castle. Then, to the astonishment of those who passed by, the ape took off the babe's swaddling clothes, licked him all over, clothed him again, and having brought him back to his cradle, safe and sound, on coming to the nurse, as it were in reproof for her neglect, dealt her a blow.'

P. 112, l. 35. *chaps*, 'jaws,' which is slang when applied to persons, and correct when used of beasts. In Shakespeare's day 'chaps' was correct in reference to persons, see *Macbeth*, I. ii. 22, where the Folio spelling is 'chops.' This form is still used with the same meaning, but is now vulgar slang. The standing of 'chaps' has deteriorated with the passage of time, as has happened to many other words.

P. 113, l. 28. *stomach*, appetite, as twice before.

P. 114, l. 10. *frequent*, frequently; adjective for adverb. Cf. p. 107, l. 4, 'happy' for 'happily.'

l. 13. *foot*, (equal) footing.

Chapter VI

Having indulged the reader and himself with a chapter of pure fun, the author returns to satire, political and social. The cold fury of which mention was made in the note to p. 98, ll. 1–21, recurs with added force. It is inevitable to quote here from a letter written by Swift to Pope on September 29, 1725. After stating that he has just finished correcting his manuscript of the *Travels*, he says: 'But the chief end I propose in all my labours is to vex the world rather than divert it; and if I could compass that design, without hurting my own person or fortune, I would be the most

indefatigable writer you have ever seen, without reading. . . . I have ever hated all nations, professions, and communities; and all my love is towards individuals. For instance: I hate the tribe of lawyers, but I love Counsellor Such-a-one and Judge Such-a-one. . . . But principally I hate and detest that animal called man; although I heartily love John, Peter, Thomas, and so forth. . . . I have got materials towards a treatise proving the falsity of that definition (of a man), *animal rationale*, and to show it should be only *rationis capax*. Upon this great foundation of misanthropy . . . the whole building of my *Travels* is erected.'

There is a certain amount of truth in this, but for the most part it is an instance of what Bolingbroke so happily called Swift's 'inverted hypocrisy.' He consistently represented himself as blacker than he was. For instance, in London he seldom went to the ordinary services, but always attended early in the morning. In Ireland guests stayed weeks in his house before they discovered that he read prayers every day with his servants; each year he devoted one-third of his total income to charity, saved one-third in order to found a permanent charity after his death, and kept for himself only the remaining third. In spite of his fame as a writer, he never sold any of his works, except once through Pope's management. Some of the copyrights he gave away. Then why did he write? Because flagrant injustice of any kind made his blood boil, and he took up arms for the suffering. The *Drapier's Letters* is a case in point. His action there could not possibly advantage him, whereas it was very likely to land him in prison. In this chapter it is the corruption prevalent in his day that rouses his anger. In his rage he goes to excess, of course; the very nature of satire makes it almost inevitable, but the root of his action is a love of justice and right. Cf. Introduction, pp. xxii and xxiii.

P. 115, l. 15. *artificially*, skilfully. Cf. Lat. *artifex*, ingenious. The modern meaning of artificial, 'not natural,' was a secondary meaning of the Lat. *artificiosus*.

P. 117, l. 1. *sideling*. Cf. p. 39, l. 15 and note.

ll. 29–30. *for . . . discourses*. This explanation is rendered necessary by the fact that Swift has made it impossible for the Brobdingnagians to communicate with the rest of the world; consequently, the king could know no other princes.

l. 33. *Demosthenes . . . Cicero*, the most famous orators of Greece and Rome respectively. 'Demosthenes has been deservedly called the prince of orators: and Cicero, his successful rival among the Romans, calls him a perfect model, and such as he wished to be.'—*Lempriere*.

l. 38. *plantations*, colonies.

P. 118, l. 1. *temperature*, temperateness.

l. 3. *House of Peers.* Swift's satire takes the form of representing the nobles of his day as possessing to the full all the virtues in which they were notably deficient.

l. 7. *born . . . kingdom*, having a seat in the legislative assembly by right of birth.

l. 15. During Walpole's term of office practically all bishops were appointed on condition that they were subservient to the Government, which was supported by the Dissenters.

l. 26. *freely . . . themselves.* Many of the members were nominated by the Court and nobles. There were also many 'rotten boroughs,' whose members represented, as Swift elsewhere says, 'nobody at all.'

P. 119, ll. 18 sqq. In other words 'Were titles ever bought either with money or by supporting the Government in evil measures?' Each of these queries of the king points out a weak spot, for the amount of corruption practised in all branches of public affairs was incredible.

P. 120, l. 16. *suit in chancery.* The Court of Chancery, which deals with matters not covered by the common law, such as disputed titles to estates, was then well known for delays and general corruption.

l. 19. Probably the Dean did not stop to consider that in depriving a man of skilled advocacy, even though his case is apparently unsound, he is making the trial unfair.

ll. 31–3. The large number of lawyers in the House of Commons has long been a subject of criticism, and is likely to be so, for a barrister's whole training tends to fit him for political conditions.

P. 121, ll. 3–5. The national debt, introduced by the Whigs in William III's reign, was always an object of attack from the Tories.

ll. 8–9. *and . . . kings.* A reference to Marlborough, who made a great fortune out of the War of the Spanish Succession.

l. 12. *mercenary standing army.* This also was a butt for Tory attacks. Swift in particular disliked the profession of arms.

ll. 24–26. This does not accord very well with the view expressed on p. 43, ll. 3–4. As, however, the passage is obviously a reference to the Test Act, and as Swift was a convinced High Churchman, liberality of opinion is not to be expected. Cf. Introduction, pp. xiii and xiv; also p. xxii.

P. 122, l. 13. *manner . . . in.* Cf. p. 93, ll. 22–3 and note.

l. 33. *wringed*, an old form of 'wrung.' See Judges vi. 38, 'wringed the dew out of the fleece.' The verb was originally strong, then 'wringed' was formed on the analogy of weak verbs, and now a return has been made to the strong form.

CHAPTER VII

Having recorded the King's direct attack upon English politics, the Dean continues his satire by protesting ironically that this prince's outlook was necessarily narrow, and by giving two-edged illustrations of the simplicity of some of his views.

It is perhaps worthy of note that Swift seemed particularly fond of inversion as a method. After discussing a subject from a given point of view, he frequently returns to it from a standpoint which is apparently exactly opposite to the first but essentially identical with it.

P. 123, l. 20. *Dionysius Halicarnassensis*, a Greek historian who left his country and proceeded to Rome for the purpose of study about 30 B.C. Swift has misunderstood him. He blamed his fellow-countrymen for underrating Rome through national prejudice.

P. 124, l. 3–p. 125, l. 24. As an exposure of the cruel absurdity of war this passage is superb. The writer of it can hardly claim to be a man-hater. It brings to the mind at once Carlyle's famous description of a war in *Sartor Resartus*.

l. 13. *as*, that.

P. 125, l. 14. *nice*, fine, delicate.

ll. 36 sqq. This sentence has justly become famous.

P. 126, ll. 5–6. Powerful as his intellect was, Swift had no delight in art as such. His mind was intensely utilitarian.

l. 8. *entities*, things that really exist.

l. 9. *transcendentals.* 'The term transcendental is applied to anything that lies beyond the bounds of our experience or which does not come within the reach of our senses.'

l. 15. *mercurial*, active, quick-witted. In astrology Mercury, the planet nearest the sun, represents swiftness.

P. 127, l. 3 sqq. A good description of the vivid plainness of Swift's own style.

l. 26. *huge bones.* These remains, the discovery of which caused a great stir in Swift's day, have since been shown to be those of animals, so that the argument falls to the ground.

ll. 36 sqq. Sir Walter Scott says of this passage: 'the excellent and judicious remarks in the text ought to have

influenced the author himself, when drawing his detestable Yahoo picture.'

P. 128, l. 3. During the reigns of the first two Hanoverians, the standing army was the cause of much discontent. The violence of the Tory opposition was partly inspired by party motives, but there was a general feeling in the country that the army might be used to restrict liberty. Its formation was contrary to the spirit of the Bill of Rights, although the letter of it was fulfilled.

ll. 23–25. *as . . . sky*. This is the complement of p. 30, l. 11.

Chapter VIII

The art shown by Swift in making Gulliver unable to readjust himself to the European scale of dimensions, and the skill with which, by repeated touches, he keeps the fact before the reader, have been greatly admired by the critics. For instance Thackeray, in a passage upon the humour of Swift, says: 'The figure suggests itself naturally to him, and comes out of his subject, as in that wonderful passage when, Gulliver's box having been dropped by the eagle into the sea, and Gulliver having been received into the ship's cabin, he calls upon the crew to bring the box into the cabin and put it on the table, the cabin being only a quarter the size of the box. It is the *veracity* of the blunder that is so admirable. Had a man come from such a country as Brobdingnag he would have blundered so.'

Sir Walter Scott also remarks: 'The sort of reaction which is produced upon the traveller's mind when restored to persons of his own size (particularly after his return from the land of giants), greatly reconciles us to a deception maintained with such accuracy and truth of description.'

There is no question that in this chapter the Dean gives an exhibition of the most delicate art. The strokes are bold and free in seeming, but in truth are most admirably directed and controlled. Swift puts forth his whole strength in order to preserve intact the consistency of his fable, and so leave upon his reader's mind an illusion of probability.

P. 129, l. 11. *tumbril*. The word comes through the *O.Fr. tumbrel* from *tomber*, to fall, and means a cart made to tilt so that its load can *fall* to the ground.

l. 19. *foot*, footing.

P. 130. l. 13. *gotten*. This form of the past participle is still given in any ordinary dictionary, though it is now seldom used.

ll. 23 sqq. This escape of Gulliver is admirably conceived. It has been suggested that a hint was taken from the incident of the roc in the Second Voyage of Sinbad the Sailor in the *Arabian Nights*, which work was first translated into English in 1724 while the *Travels* were still in preparation. The story goes: 'As I perceived her [the roc] coming, I crept close to the egg [on which it was about to sit], so that I had before me one of the legs of the bird, that was as big as the trunk of a tree: I tied myself strongly to it with the cloth that went round my turban, in hopes that when the roc flew away next morning, she would carry me with her out of this desert island: and after having passed the night in this condition, the bird actually flew away next morning as soon as it was day, and carried me so high that I could not see the earth; she afterwards descended all of a sudden, with so much rapidity, that I lost my senses. But when the roc was sat, and I found myself on the ground, I speedily untied the knot, and had scarcely done so, when the bird, having taken up a serpent of monstrous length in her bill, flew straight away.'

P. 131, l. 6. A well-known example of this habit of eagles is afforded by the death of Æschylus, who 'being informed that he was to die by the fall of a house . . . withdrew from the city into the fields, where he sat down. An eagle, with a tortoise in her bill, flew over his bald head, and supposing it to be a stone, dropped her prey upon it to break the shell, and Æschylus instantly died of the blow.'—*Lemprière*.

l. 13. *sign-post*, i.e. a signboard.

in, we should say 'on.'

l. 18. *squash*. A rather good variant for 'splash.' Both words are onomatopœic.

P. 133, l. 6. *better*, rather more. 'A good hour' means 'a full hour,' 'at least an hour.'

l. 14. *great shout*. One would almost have expected Swift to say here 'a shout, though somewhat faint, as if far distant.'

l. 18. *them*, ungrammatical.

l. 21. *all . . . moving*, by everything which could move compassion.

ll. 26–28. See head note to this chapter.

P. 134, l. 21. *to rights*, completely. This phrase is now incorrect English, but is in common use among farm folk in Essex.

l. 37. *make*, overhaul, direct his vessel towards.

P. 135, ll. 19–20. Is any correction needed?

P. 136, l. 1. *Ill*, not 'sick,' but 'wicked.'
l. 28. *of*, for.

P. 137, l. 21. *admired*, wondered, one of the meanings of the Lat. *admirari*. The other was 'admire' in the modern sense.

P. 138, l. 16. *Phaeton*, a son of Phœbus, god of the sun. He persuaded his father to allow him to drive the chariot of the sun for one day, but as he endangered the earth by driving too near it (the excessive heat he caused is the reason of the black skins of the Africans, and the parched condition of some of that continent), Jupiter struck him with a thunderbolt, and he fell to earth.

ll. 19 sqq. *Tonquin*, or *Tonking* is a district in French Cochin-China. *New Holland* was the name given by the Dutch to Australia, a great part of the west coast of which they had explored. Cf. p. 70, l. 37 and note. Lat. 44, long. 143 is actually in the Japanese island of Yesso. With these data the captain's course may easily be worked out on the map.

l. 29. *Downs*. Cf. p. 71, l. 33 and note.

l. 31. *freight*, now used of goods only; 'fare' is used of persons.

l. 34. *five shillings*. If Gulliver went ashore at the Downs, as seems to be the case, this is very little hire for a horse to Redriff.

The following lines are part of a poem by Dr. Arbuthnot, Swift's friend, written when the *Travels* first appeared:

'Soon as Glumdalclitch miss'd her pleasing care,
She wept, she blubber'd, and she tore her hair:
No British miss sincerer grief has known,
Her squirrel missing, or her sparrow flown.
She furl'd her sampler, and haul'd in her thread,
And stuck her needle into Grildrig's bed;
Then spread her hands, and with a bounce let fall
Her baby, like a giant in Guildhall.
In peals of thunder now she roars—and now
She gently whimpers like a lowing cow;
Yet lovely in her sorrow still appears;
Her locks dishevelled, and her floods of tears
Seem like the lofty barn of some rich swain,
When from the thatch drips fast a shower of rain.'

For Dr. Arbuthnot see Introduction, p. xli.